Committee of Am. Bar Ass'n.	1½d	8d	7s
	2½d	1½d	13s

All prices include prepayment of postage. Order from AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts

the outbreak continued [illegible] through noise and smoke provided by blank cartridges. And the hero was supposed to round out the full force of this realism by clapping his hand over his heart, pulling it away quickly, looking at it in surprised horror, and shouting: "My God, I'm shot!"

The very fact that such profanity from the original script was allowed to be used showed how important the good impresarios considered realism to be in this scene. And they were materially

Robert Welch

Love.

ROBERT WELCH
Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

January 28, 1969

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Post Office Box 152
Sevierville, Tennessee 37862

Dear Heinie:

Col. Bunker brought us this afternoon a photostatic copy of one part of Page 1 of the Boston Evening Transcript of October 14, 1932. He apparently had it made from microfilmed records. So the text is not too easily legible, and the copy we are making for you, therefore, may be even less so. We are, therefore, enclosing a typewritten transcript, but sending the photostat anyway so that you can see the layout.

Larry says that the statement was probably drafted by John W. Davis. In any event we are delighted to have this much more information about it. We very much appreciate Larry's help in this connection, and of course your own in calling the statement to our attention in the first place.

Sincerely,

Bob

RW:ca

Robert Welch

Coolidge and
Smith Warn
to Cut Costs

Page 1 of the Boston Evening Transcript of October 14, 1932

Join Other Leaders in Rallying
People to Force Government
Slash

See Extravagance
Breeding Anarchy

Tell Byrd, That $14,000,000,-
000 Burden Is Too
Great

Chicago, Oct. 14 (A.P.)-- An open letter bearing the signatures of former President Calvin Coolidge, former Governor Alfred E. Smith, former Secretary of War Newton D. Baker, former Secretary of State Elihu Root, General John J. Pershing and Admiral William S. Sims, all members of the advisory council to the National Economy League, was made public today, declaring that "the general public will find itself in a condition of servitude" unless all governmental costs are reduced. The letter was addressed to Rear Admiral Richard E. Byrd, chairman of the League, and was read by him to a meeting of the executive committee of the League held to complete arrangements for the first national convention of the organization in Washington, on Dec. 12 and 13.

The letter said:

"In two decades we have seen the cost of Government rise from about three billion dollars to about fourteen billion dollars. This was too much when taxes

were moderately easy to pay. It is a crushing burden under present business conditions.

"We believe that these public expenditures should be reduced all along the line. Every unnecessary action of the Government should be abolished. High salaries should be reduced. The people should be permitted to spend more of their earnings on themselves and required to spend less on the tax collector.

"We must discharge our obligations to the veterans and their dependents. But we should waste no money and tolerate no extravagance under the claim of performing any of these necessary functions.

"All the cost of local, State, and national government must be reduced without fear and without favor. Unless the people through unified action arise and take charge of their Government they will find that their Government has taken charge of them. Independence and liberty will be gone and the general public will find itself in a condition of servitude to an aggression of organized and selfish minorities.

"When that day comes our political and economic system will neither merit nor command the respect and support of the people and universal bankruptcy and anarchy will prevail. If we are to be saved from that catastrophe we must join in organized service, organized sacrifice and organized patriotism."

C.B. Bunker says this statement was probably drafted by John W. Davis

Sanctio[n] $3,000,000 'Work' [L]oan to B. & O.

Money to [P]rovide Jobs for 1500 [M]en for Six Months

Washington, [O]ct. 14 (A.P.)—The Baltimore & Ohio [R]ailroad Company today was authorized by the Interstate Commerce Commi[s]sion to borrow $3,000,000 from the Reconstruction Corporation to build 175 coal cars and 1500 freight cars and to rebuild [2]5 locomotives.

It was authorized as a "work" loan under the plan developed two months ago at conferences between Interstate Commerce Commissioners, directors of the Reconstruction Corporation and railroad executives. The money is expected by railroad officials to provide employment for 1500 men on a 30-hour week basis for six months. Of the money $[7]50,000 will be used to rebuild and repair locomotives, $1,700,000 for repairs to cars, and $[5]50,000 for building new all steel gondola cars. The Baltimore & Ohio on March and May 16 received approval of loans aggregating $32,500,000 and on Aug. [2]5 a further loan of $31,[8]25,000 for refinancing.

Hoover's Hand Painfully Cut and Bruised

Hurt in Greeting 3000 at Reception — Otherwise in Excellent Health

Washington, Oct. 15 (A.P.)—As a result of shaking hands with more than 3000 people at a reception last night, from which he retired with more than 1000 still in line, President Hoover today appeared with a bandaged right hand. Dr. Joel T. Boone, the White House physician, in a statement said:

"The President is in his normal good condition today. He followed his ordinary routine, commencing with exercises early this morning, as has been his custom since his inauguration. He is in excellent health and today is also in good condition and spirits. His hand is bruised and has several small cuts in the palm and between the fingers. The palm is black and blue, but the injury while painful was not serious.

Spotting Blood on White Gloves

There was a suggestion that a ring on the hand of someone who greeted him had caused the cuts. Senator Reed, who was an early caller today, quoted the President as saying he was perfectly willing to endure the reception but

Continued on Page Four

Rob Br[i]ghton Ave. Safe of $952

Coolidge and Smith Warn to Cut Costs

John Other Leaders in Rallying People to Force Government Slash

See Extravagance Breeding Anarchy

Tell Byrd, That $14,000,000,000 Burden Is Too Great

Chicago, Oct. 14 (A.P.)—An open letter bearing the signatures of former President Calvin Coolidge, former Governor Alfred E. Smith, former Secretary of War Newton D. Baker, former Secretary of State Elihu Root, General John J. Pershing and Admiral William S. Sims, all members of the advisory council to the National Economy League, was made public today, declaring that "the general public will find itself in a condition of servitude" unless all governmental costs are reduced. The letter was addressed to Rear Admiral Richard E. Byrd, chairman of the League, and was read by him to a meeting of the executive committee of the League held "to complete arrangements for the first national convention of the organization in Washington, on Dec. 12 and 13."

The letter said:

"In two decades we have seen the cost of Government rise from about three billion dollars to about fourteen billion dollars. This was too much when taxes were moderately easy to pay. It is a crushing burden under present business conditions.

"We believe that these public expenditures should be reduced all along the line. Every unnecessary action of the Government should be abolished. High salaries should be reduced. The people should be permitted to spend more of their earnings on themselves and required to spend less on the tax collector.

"We must discharge our obligations to the veterans and their dependents. But we should waste no money and tolerate no extravagance under the claim of performing any of these necessary functions.

"All the cost of local, State and national government must be reduced without fear and without favor. Unless the people through unified action arise and take charge of their Government they will find that their Government has taken charge of them. Independence and liberty will be gone and the general public will find itself in a condition of servitude to an aggression of organized and selfish minorities.

"When that day comes our political and economic system will neither merit nor command the respect and support of the people and universal bankruptcy and anarchy will prevail. If we are to be saved from that catastrophe we must join in organized service, organized sacrifice and organized patriotism."

AMERICAN OPINION
An Informal Review

Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

June 10, 1966

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Post Office Box 152
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Heinie:

Just a brief note, but to thank you a great deal, for all of the letters you are writing, with copies of the June American Opinion, to the presidents of the various airlines.

This may not break any of these rocks, but it certainly ought to help to soften them up. And the effort is much appreciated.

Sincerely,

Bob

RW:jg

Robert Welch

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY
INCORPORATED

Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

November 10, 1965

Founder
ROBERT WELCH

The Council
N. E. ADAMSON, JR.
THOMAS J. ANDERSON
T. COLEMAN ANDREWS
FRANK CULLEN BROPHY
JOHN T. BROWN
LAURENCE E. BUNKER *
F. GANO CHANCE
STILLWELL J. CONNER
RALPH E. DAVIS
S. M. DRASKOVICH
REV. FRANCIS E. FENTON
WM. J. GREDE *
A. G. HEINSOHN, JR. *
FRED C. KOCH
ROBERT D. LOVE
CLARENCE MANION
N. FLOYD MCGOWIN
W. B. MCMILLAN
ROBERT H. MONTGOMERY
REVILO P. OLIVER
THOMAS PARKER, M.D.
LOUIS RUTHENBURG
J. NELSON SHEPHERD
ROBERT W. STODDARD *
CHARLES B. STONE, III

* *Executive Committee*

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Post Office Box 152
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Heinie:

Thanks for including me among the "Friends, Romans, Countrymen," to whom you sent a copy of your LITTLE BOY BLUE letter of November 2. I enjoyed reading it very much indeed.

Good luck!

Sincerely,

Bob

RW:jg

Robert Welch

December 6, 1961
(Dictated December 5, 1961)

Mr. Merwin Hart
National Economic Council, Inc.
156 Fifth Avenue
New York 10, New York

Dear Merwin:

Many thanks for publicizing Mr. Heinsohn's speech, NEEDED: A ROAR FROM HOME, in your ECONOMIC COUNCIL LETTER of December 1.

The enclosed check for five dollars is for forty additional copies. The money may not be adequate, however, because I should like to have these forty copies, as a package, delivered to me at the Harvard Club, 27 West 44th Street, New York City, sometime this coming Friday, December 8, marked "Hold for arrival." And you may have no other means of doing this except by hiring a messenger. If so, and you will let me know the cost, I'll be glad to have a check for that amount sent back by return mail.

As always, my kindest regards.

Sincerely,

RW:th

Robert Welch

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY
INCORPORATED

Belmont 78, Massachusetts

May 22, 1961
(Dictated May 20, 1961)

Founder
ROBERT WELCH

The Council
N. E. ADAMSON, JR.
THOMAS J. ANDERSON
T. COLEMAN ANDREWS
SPRUILLE BRADEN
LAURENCE E. BUNKER
F. GANO CHANCE
STILLWELL J. CONNER
RALPH E. DAVIS
S. M. DRASKOVICH
REV. RICHARD GINDER
WM. J. GREDE*
A. G. HEINSOHN, JR.*
GRANVILLE F. KNIGHT
FRED C. KOCH*
ALFRED KOHLBERG†
CLARENCE MANION*
FRANK E. MASLAND, JR.
N. FLOYD MCGOWIN
W. B. MCMILLAN
REVILO P. OLIVER
COLA G. PARKER
M. T. PHELPS
LOUIS RUTHENBURG
J. NELSON SHEPHERD
JAMES SIMPSON, JR.†
ROBERT W. STODDARD*
CHARLES B. STONE, III
PAUL H. TALBERT

**Executive Committee*
†*Deceased*

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textile Mills
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Heinie:

The order for a postage meter plate to read as indicated in your letter of May 15 is a brilliant conception.

It is certainly an idea which we may be able to promote nationally, and especially if either the Post Office or Pitney Bowes are successful in any steps to stop our use of the present slogan.

We may tell our members about this proposed additional message for envelopes, in the June bulletin. And I should be very much interested in what you hear from Pitney Bowes, if anything, in the meantime.

Good luck!

Sincerely,

Robert Welch

RW:th

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY
INCORPORATED

Belmont 78, Massachusetts

April 4, 1961

Founder
ROBERT WELCH

The Council
N. E. ADAMSON, JR.
THOMAS J. ANDERSON
T. COLEMAN ANDREWS
SPRUILLE BRADEN
LAURENCE E. BUNKER
F. GANO CHANCE
STILLWELL J. CONNER
RALPH E. DAVIS
S. M. DRASKOVICH
REV. RICHARD GINDER
WM. J. GREDE*
E. P. HAMILTON
A. G. HEINSOHN, JR.*
GRANVILLE F. KNIGHT
FRED C. KOCH*
ALFRED KOHLBERG†
CLARENCE MANION*
FRANK E. MASLAND, JR.
N. FLOYD MCGOWIN
W. B. MCMILLAN
REVILO P. OLIVER
COLA G. PARKER
M. T. PHELPS
LOUIS RUTHENBURG
J. NELSON SHEPHERD
JAMES SIMPSON, JR.†
ROBERT W. STODDARD*
CHARLES B. STONE, III
PAUL H. TALBERT

**Executive Committee*
†*Deceased*

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textile Mills
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Heinie:

Thanks a lot for the photostatic copies of your letter as it appeared in the Charlotte News.

We are going to send a copy to each of the members of the COUNCIL at once. And if anybody here can possibly spare the time, we are going to send a copy to each member of the Committee Of Endorsers as far as the copies will go.

As to whether or not you should print this in the Knoxville paper as a paid advertisement, I don't know. Since your letter accuses the Editor of the Charlotte News of "an absolute and deliberate lie," he has made what might be considered a partial retraction by printing your letter, and I don't know whether the row that might be stirred up by your printing it in the Knoxville paper would be worthwhile or not. It is something you will have to decide, but my advice would be slightly against it.

Thanks a lot for the fighting support just the same. And, as always, my kindest regards.

Sincerely,

Bob

RW:th

Robert Welch

AMERICAN OPINION
Belmont 78, Massachusetts

5/13/59

Dear Heinie:

Many thanks for letting me use your name on CASE, and for the offer to contribute effort as well. Your confidence and encouragement are greatly appreciated.

I agree with you in being afraid that Herman Talmadge is choosing to become a politician instead of a statesman. Which is too bad as I had great hopes for him. Washington

AMERICAN OPINION
Belmont 78, Massachusetts

(2

seems to get most of them sooner or later.

Many thanks again, Heinie, and my kindest regards.

Sincerely,

Bob

AMERICAN OPINION
An Informal Review

Belmont 78, Massachusetts

June 23, 1959

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textile Mills
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Heine:

We have just written a note to Washington, asking Bonner Fellers to send us one thousand of the "Just A Minute" folders at once. And if they get here in time, we shall enclose three of these folders for each member of the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY, with the bulletins going out to the Chapter Leaders and to the Home Chapter members for July.

Good luck.

Sincerely,

Bob

RW:ccb

Robert Welch

AMERICAN OPINION
An Informal Review

Belmont 78, Massachusetts

September 22, 1958

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textiles
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Heinie:

The enclosed letter is primarily just to let you see what went out to each of the men who attended the Memphis meeting. It was dictated by Bob Snowden, as his idea of what would be most appropriate and effective for the members of this group, so I did not change it in any way.

As I recall, we checked with you, and you had no objection to our mentioning the grand help which you had already given to the cause. And I was able to check with Martin Condon personally in Hot Springs, before my secretary mailed the letters from Boston, to be sure that he did not mind our telling the world about his good deeds.

It was certainly kind of you to come over all the way from Sevierville, and I was delighted to have the chance to visit with you for the few hours. If we had just one thousand patriots working closely together, each of them as able, influential, determined, and effective as yourself, I think we could defeat the conspiracy. And maybe by working hard enough we can get that many men of that caliber into the fight in time. The odds are certainly terrifically against us at present, by any realistic appraisal; and yet, as I said in the manuscript, history is full of apparently lost causes which still were won.

With admiration, deep appreciation, and kindest regards, I am

Sincerely,

Bob

RW:eml

Robert Welch

Robert H.W. Welch jr.
810 Main Street
Cambridge, Massachusetts

September 19, 1958

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textiles
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Heinie:

It was kind of you to come to the University Club the other night, and I trust that I thoroughly alarmed you. That was my purpose in coming to Memphis.

Believing that you are sincerely concerned and alarmed, and ready to do your part in resisting this menace of Communism, let me suggest a few things that you might fit into your program.

Mr. Heinsohn, for instance, who came from Knoxville for the dinner, purchased for his salaried employees 51 subscriptions to AMERICAN OPINION at $5.00 each, and naturally he charged that as a business expense. Martin Condon, who could not be with us at the dinner, previously had bought 100 subscriptions for his employees.

If that seems too much in your business, why not do what you can? For instance, take 5, 10 or 15 and get friends started learning the truth. It's only in this way that the circle can be enlarged.

Then, if you wish to carry your influence even farther, and you cannot work on this thing actively yourself, perhaps you can take a life subscription for $100.00 or, as some are doing, invest up to $500.00 in the capital stock of my company, Robert Welch, Inc., which publishes the magazine. You know best how you can do this job, and of course it is your decision.

Our entire heritage is at stake. The battle must be won, and whatever help you can give me would be deeply appreciated. Of course you realize that I receive not a penny for my effort.

Sincerely,

Robert Welch

RW:eml

AMERICAN OPINION
An Informal Review

Belmont 78, Massachusetts

September 3, 1958

Mr. A. G. Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textile Mills
Sevierville, Tennessee

Dear Mr. Heinsohn:

Your letter of August 28, and the enclosures, constitute one of those things which go so far to make all of the hard work seem worthwhile.

Your own life subscription to AMERICAN OPINION has been recorded, and the regular subscriptions are being entered for the fifty-one names on your salary list, to start with the September issue.

Since I am actually working about sixteen hours per day, seven days per week, anyway, and the girls in this small office are almost as crowded as I am; and since this pressure is considerably increased in connection with getting the October issue of the magazine to the printer, before I leave on September 11 for speeches in Milwaukee and Memphis and for other matters; under these conditions, instead of my trying to write the frank comments which you request, in connection with the material of the TENNESSEE INDEPENDENTS, I am wondering if it will not be all right for me to wait and try to talk to you about this matter when I see you in Memphis. I'll be there, in Bob Snowden's good care, at least an hour or two before the meeting itself, or perhaps we could talk a little while after the meeting breaks up that night, or I'll be in Memphis all of Tuesday morning until my plane leaves for Chicago in the early afternoon. If this doesn't work out, then I'll still try to put some of my thoughts in writing, if you want them.

With my most earnest appreciation for your encouraging support, and looking forward to seeing you in Memphis, I am

Sincerely,

Robert Welch

RW:eml

Robert Welch

ROBERT WELCH
Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

Dear Heinie —

Thought you might like to see the enclosed memo, just as it came to me.

My congratulations, my earnest thanks, and my kindest regards. And mine.

Sincerely,

Bob

Marian Welch

WITHIN-OFFICE MEMORANDUM

To: Mr. Welch Date: April 27, 1965

From: Ellen Lovett Subject:

Message from Don Rueber

Said Mr. Heinsohn did a marvelous job on the speech which he made in Spokane. While the crowd was smaller than usual , the requests for information regarding presentations is larger than from speeches by John Rousselot, Reed Benson, and Tom Anderson. Don feels that he'll get forty to fifty new members as a result of the speech. Mr. Heinsohn appeals to the business man. Don highly recommends him for similar speeches.

Don thought the last few bulletins were very good and picked up the morale of the members.

EML

HENRY HAZLITT

.60

LIFE AND DEATH OF THE WELFARE STATE



LIFE AND DEATH

OF THE

WELFARE STATE

by

Henry Hazlitt

LA JOLLA RANCHO PRESS
La Jolla, California

CONTENTS

Instant Utopia 3

Salvation Through Government Spending 7

Consequences of Dollar Debasement 13

The High Cost of Wage Hikes 23

Price and Wage Controls 31

Runaway Relief and Social Insecurity 37

Soaking the Rich 43

Government Unlimited 49

What We Can Do About It 55

© 1968 by Henry Hazlitt

First Printing, August, 1968

Printed in the United States of America

CHAPTER I

INSTANT UTOPIA

In America today most of the older generation—and many of the young—stand appalled at the nihilism of the self-styled Now Generation and its demands for unattainable reforms, or merely for the sheer destruction of whatever is established.

But the cynicism, nihilism, and revolt of "youth", and even of some of its parents, are the result of a common cause. In the last generation politicians and governments have been promising the voters that they could not only bring perpetual full employment, prosperity, and "economic growth", but solve the age-old problem of poverty overnight. And the end result is not merely that accomplishment has fallen far short of promises, but that the attempt to fulfill the promises has brought an enormous increase in government spending, an enormous increase in the burden of taxes; chronic deficits, chronic inflation, and a constant loss in the buying power of the people's earning and savings. "Social Security" has brought an ominous increase in social insecurity.

Another result of the promise of instant utopia has been a gigantic growth of governmental power—of interference in the details of everybody's business and everybody's life. As this

power has increased, it has also become concentrated in fewer and fewer hands. In America the towns and villages have steadily lost power to the States, the States to the Federal government, and Congress to the President.

One mark of the welfare state everywhere has been the gathering of power into the hands of one man. This is no mere unfortunate coincidence; it has been inevitable. Thirty-five years ago the eminent Swedish economist Gustav Cassel explained in a prophetic lecture how "planned economy," long enough continued, must lead to despotism:

"The leadership of the State in economic affairs which advocates of Planned Economy want to establish is, as we have seen, necessarily connected with a bewildering mass of government interferences of a steadily cumulative nature. The arbitrariness, the mistakes and the inevitable contradictions of such policy will, as daily experience shows, only strengthen the demand for a more rational coordination of the different measures and, therefore, for unified leadership. For this reason Planned Economy will always develop into Dictatorship."

The succeeding chapters of this book explain in detail the ideology and methods behind the present inflation and aggrandizement of State power, the conditions to which it has led and, finally, the

solutions we must apply if this sinister threat – not only to the economic future of the American people but to the future of civilization itself – is to be averted.

CHAPTER II

SALVATION THROUGH GOVERNMENT SPENDING

In the early Nineteen Thirties, in the depth of the Great Depression, the theory became fashionable that the cause of all depressions was Lack of Purchasing Power. The people just did not have enough money, and because of unwarranted pessimism they were refusing to spend enough even of what they had. The solution was therefore simple: at such a time the government should boldly increase its own spending, "prime the pump," and "get things moving again."

Naive advocates of this theory assumed that more government spending was the whole answer. The more sophisticated advocates saw that the increased spending would not give people more purchasing power if the government kept the budget balanced and took it all away again in higher taxes. The thing to do was to spend more **without** taxing more. The trick, in other words, was deliberately to unbalance the budget—to run a deficit.

Most of the champions of deficits—including the great John Maynard Keynes himself, the theory's chief architect—at least publicly professed to believe that the required deficit could be financed by selling bonds directly to the pub-

lic, to be paid for out of savings. But again, the more sophisticated deficiteers must have seen that a man who buys a $1,000 bond out of his savings surrenders that much purchasing power for the life of the bond. In short, he loses just as much buying power as the government gains. On net balance, no new buying power has been created.

How, then, can the government "create" new purchasing power? It can do so only if it "sells" its bonds to the banking system, and if the banks "pay" for them by creating deposit credits on their books in favor of the government. This leads to an increase in "the money supply"—that is, an increase either in the amount of currency or of demand bank deposits.

If the government's new bonds are sold direct to member banks, there tends to be a dollar-for-dollar increase in the money supply as compared with the amount of new bonds. But if the government's securities get into the hands of the Federal Reserve Banks, they are used to create what is called "high-powered" money. This can lead to the creation of about $6 of new money for every dollar of new government securities.

Thus new "purchasing power" is brought into being. Thus people have more money to buy more goods, create more jobs, stimulate more output, and restore prosperity.

At least so it seems for the moment. But soon

there are other consequences.

If there has been heavy unemployment and much "idle capacity", the new monetary purchasing power in the system, by increasing the demand for commodities, may indeed lead to an increase in production, and hence to an increase in employment. This has been hailed as the great Keynesian contribution to economic theory and policy. But there are fatal flaws in it.

Unless there were some serious discoordination of prices, costs, and wages, mass unemployment would not exist in the first place. When it does exist, the only appropriate cure is individual adjustment of prices, costs, and wages to each other—the return of coordination. But this can be brought about automatically if only the competitive forces of the market are given free play.

The reason the Keynesian medicine can work —under special conditions and for short periods —is that by increasing monetary demand and prices it may increase both sales and profit margins, and so restore production and employment. Yet this could be done even more effectively—and without the poisonous side-effects and after-effects—by restoring freedom of competition and individual coordination of prices and wages.

The Keynesians think in terms of aggregates. Their remedy is to increase the total money supply, and thereby to bring the price "level" sufficiently above the wage "level" to restore or

maintain the "level" of profit and so keep the wheels of industry spinning at full speed.

This remedy is defective in two respects. It tacitly assumes that there is a **uniform** discrepancy between prices and wages and a **uniform** percentage of "idle capacity" throughout industry. Neither is true. If "industry" is estimated to be operating at 80 per cent of capacity, we must remember that this figure is at best an **average.** It may cover a situation in which, say, industry A is operating at only 60 per cent, industry B at 63 per cent, and so on up to industry M at 97 per cent and industry N at 100 per cent. If we try to expand the money supply enough to return industries A and B to full capacity we may completely "overheat" industries M and N and produce serious productive distortions and bottlenecks.

What is more, an increase in the stock of money, contrary to Keynesian theory, will begin to force an irregular increase in prices long before "full capacity" has been reached and the "slack" taken up—if only for the reason that the "slack" is never uniform throughout industry. In a very short time, also, with the increase in prices and the increase in the demand for labor, wages will start climbing too. Then, if the previous trouble was that most wages were already too high in relation to most prices, there will again be discoordination between wages and prices; and the Keynesian prescription will call for still further

doses of government spending, deficits, and new money.

So the Keynesian medicine must lead to chronic deficits and chronic inflating of the money supply. This is precisely what we have had. It is no accident that we are now running our ninth annual deficit in succession, and that we have had 32 deficits in the last 38 years. It is no accident that the U. S. money supply (currency plus demand deposits) has been increased more than fivefold —from $36 billion at the end of 1939 to $185 billion. And so it is no accident that, in spite of a tremendous increase in industrial production in this thirty-year period, prices have increased (to July 1968) by 174 per cent.

Today the Federal Government is spending in a single year **256 times as much** as in the fiscal year before the outbreak of World War I. The recent increase in annual spending is being attributed by government spokesmen to the cost of the war in Vietnam. Yet though in 1969 scheduled national defense expenditures are $36.6 billion greater than in 1960, total expenditures are $96.4 billion greater. This means that nondefense expenditures alone have increased $59.8 billion in the same period. It is the determination to impose the welfare state, not the war, that has led to this incredible squandering.

A central fallacy of Keynesianism as of all inflationary nostrums is that they chronically con-

fuse "income" in terms of paper money with real income in goods and services. It is possible to increase paper-money income to any amount by debasing the currency. But real income can only be increased by working more efficiently, saving more, investing more, and producing more.

So let us not be too impressed by politicians who constantly cite the increase in dollar incomes, in dollar "gross national product," to show that we never had it so good. In Italy today, as a result of past inflations, it takes 624 lire to buy an American dollar. So anyone in Italy with an annual income or even total property worth more than $1,600 American dollars is already a millionaire in his own currency.

CHAPTER III

CONSEQUENCES OF DOLLAR DEBASEMENT

Let us begin by recalling two comparisons already mentioned. From the end of 1939 to the middle of 1968 the United States stock of money (hand-to-hand currency plus demand bank deposits) was increased more than fivefold—from $36 billion to $185 billion. In the same thirty-year period (in spite of a huge increase in industrial production) prices of goods and services increased by an average of 174 per cent.

This debasement of the dollar has resulted in a succession of problems, including a chronic "deficit" in the American balance of payments.

The "balance-of-payments problem" has arisen not merely because of our domestic inflation but of the combination of this with the so-called "gold exchange" standard and the world monetary system set up at Bretton Woods in 1944. Under that system each government undertook to keep its own currency unit within 1 per cent of parity in either direction by buying or selling that currency against other currencies in the foreign exchange market. In addition, the U.S. government undertook to make the dollar the world's "reserve currency" and anchor currency by guaranteeing to keep it convertible at all times (for foreign central banks, but not for its own citizens) into gold

at the fixed price of $35 an ounce.

Though only central banks, and neither American nor foreign private citizens, have the right to ask for this conversion, keeping the dollar convertible into gold at this fixed price has proved increasingly embarrassing to our monetary authorities, especially since 1957. During the last decade we have been sending or spending abroad for various purposes—to pay for imports, for foreign aid, and for the support of our armed forces in Europe and in Vietnam—billions of more dollars each year than we have been getting back in payment for our exports and earnings on our capital invested abroad.

This excess of outgoing dollars is called the "deficit" in our balance of payments. From the end of 1957 to the end of 1967 this deficit has run at an average of $2.8 billion a year. At the end of this year the cumulative total will be in the neighborhood of $30 billion.

As a result, our monetary gold stock had fallen from $22.8 billion at the end of 1957 to only $10.4 billion in July, 1968. Against these reduced gold reserves the U.S. had liquid liabilities to foreign official institutions of $15.2 billion, plus short-term liabilities to private foreigners of $15.7 billion—a total of nearly $31 billion.

In much discussion our dollar liabilities to private foreigners are not counted as a potential demand on our gold reserves because private

banks, firms, and individuals cannot directly demand gold for their dollars. But under the I.M.F. agreements they can always indirectly sell their dollars at par to their respective central banks.

In sum, against U.S. gold reserves of only about $10 billion there are three times as many potential foreign dollar claims for gold.

As our gold has drained out, and as foreign dollar claims against it have mounted, the blame has been put on this "deficit" in our balance of payments. But instead of dealing with the main cause of this deficit—domestic inflation—our governmental authorities have allowed the inflation to go on, and have even increased it, while trying to stop the symptom. They have treated the deficit in the balance of payments as itself the problem, and have adopted desperate measures to try to halt it by direct controls.

Their first major control, imposed in 1964, was a penalty tax on purchases by Americans of foreign securities. To make such foreign investments the culprit responsible for a balance-of-payments deficit was not only arbitrary but implausible on its face. In the five years 1958 to 1962 the aggregate net outflow of $16.6 billion for new foreign investment was offset by $15.4 billion of income from previous investment. Even the then Secretary of the Treasury, who had asked for the penalty tax, conceded: "In the long run the outflow of American capital to foreign

countries is more than balanced by the inflow of income earned on that capital."

He urged the tax, in fact, "only as a temporary measure to meet our problem pending more fundamental solutions." Of course the more fundamental solutions were never adopted, so the "temporary" security tax was not only renewed, but on Jan. 1 of 1968 the President in addition imposed mandatory controls on direct investments by American corporations abroad.

The implication of these measures is that our private foreign investment has been one of the chief causes of the deficit in our balance of payments. This is clearly untrue. It is Federal spending, through foreign aid and military outlays, that has been in deficit. In recent years the private sector as a whole, as a result of export surpluses and income on private investments abroad, has continued to generate a payments surplus.

In 1967 our total new foreign investments—including bank loans, purchases of foreign securities, and direct investments in factories and sales facilities—amounted to $5.5 billion. But the income from these and earlier private investments came to $6.2 billion.

At best, then, all these foreign investment restrictions and prohibitions are shortsighted. Any reduction we make in new foreign investment today means a corresponding reduction in investment income tomorrow.

If the Federal government, instead of picking foreign investment as the culprit chiefly responsible for our balance-of-payments deficit, had put punitive tariffs on the further import of foreign luxuries—liquors, wines, perfumes, jewelry, furs, and automobiles—its action would still have been a mistake, but much less damaging to our future economic strength. These tight curbs on direct foreign investments by American corporations must severely hamper their ability to compete successfully with other international corporations in Europe and the rest of the world.

The President's own Economic Report of 1967 pointed out that: "U.S. investment abroad generates not only a flow of investment income but also additional U.S. exports. From a balance-of-payments point of view this is an additional dividend." The U.S. Department of Commerce found, in fact, that in 1964 $6.3 billion, or 25 per cent of our total exports in that year, went to affiliates of American companies overseas.

It is hardly too much to say that direct foreign investments, with the exports and income to which they give rise, are the greatest single source of long-range strength in our balance-of-payments position.

Still worse, from the standpoint of their direct restriction on personal liberty, were the proposals (fortunately not yet enacted) to have Congress

impose practically prohibitive penalty taxes on Americans travelling abroad.

The whole effort to eliminate our balance-of-payments deficit by direct controls over arbitrarily selected individual items is doomed to failure. Such controls may succeed in changing the relative amounts of different items, but cannot change the end-result. At best we can make our immediate balance-of-payments look better at the expense of our future balance. We cannot unilaterally cut down our purchases or travel or investments abroad without also cutting down our sales abroad and our investment income from abroad. In his Economic Report of 1968 the President himself conceded that "by provoking retaliation" we may "reduce our receipts by as much as or more than our payments."

The whole so-called "balance-of-payments problem" would never have arisen except under the arbitrarily contrived International Monetary Fund gold-exchange system set up at Bretton Woods in 1944. It could not exist if the United States and other countries were on a pure "floating" paper standard with rates fluctuating daily in a free market, because under such a system the fluctuations would themselves set in motion the self-correcting forces to prevent unwanted deficits or surpluses from arising. Nor could the balance-of-payments problem exist if the United

States and other leading countries were on a full gold standard. A "deficit" in the balance of payments would then lead to an immediate outflow of gold. This in turn would lead to immediately higher interest rates and a contraction of currency and credit in the "deficit" country, and the opposite results in the "surplus" countries, and so bring the so-called deficit to a halt.

Under the Bretton Woods system and the "gold exchange" standard, however, no self-correction of this sort is allowed to take place. When we "lose" paper dollars abroad we simply print more at home to take their place. And when Europe gains these dollars about half of them find their way into the central banks, where they become additional "reserves" against which European governments issue still more of their own currency. Thus further world inflation, in both the "deficit" and the "surplus" country, seems to take place automatically.

In the I. M. F. system there are no freely fluctuating market rates for individual currencies to reveal and correct international imbalances. Market rates are not allowed to fluctuate by more than 1 per cent above or below parity. At that point each government is obligated to buy or sell its own or foreign currencies to prevent any further departure from parity.

These currency-pegging operations are supplemented by the so-called gold-exchange standard.

This arrangement, which goes back to international agreements in 1921 and 1922, permits central banks to count not only their gold but their holdings of dollars (and of British pounds) as part of their reserves. The arrangement was adopted in the belief that there was a "shortage of gold" and a "shortage of international liquidity." As a result the world's monetary "reserves" today consist of about $42 billion in gold **plus** about $28 billion of "reserve currencies," of which more than $15 billion are American dollars. As credit and other currencies are issued against these reserve currencies, "reserves" themselves become inflated.

The real reason the American monetary authorities fear a continued "deficit" in the balance-of-payments is that they have given the central banks of other countries the right to demand gold for their dollars at $35 an ounce. They have seen more than half our gold reserves flow out in the last eleven years, and they are fearful of losing any more.

They long ago prohibited American citizens from holding or asking for gold. In the last few years they have resorted to increasingly desperate expedients. Where possible, they have brought political pressure on foreign central banks to keep them from asking for gold for their dollars. Early in 1968 they stopped feeding out gold to hold down the price in private markets in London, Paris, and Zurich. They now try to maintain an inherently unstable two-price system, with official monetary gold at $35 an ounce and non-monetary gold free to sell at whatever price supply and demand fix.

Early in 1968 the Administration also got Congress to abolish the remaining gold-reserve requirement of 25 per cent against Federal Reserve notes, on the plea that this was necessary to reassure foreign central banks by making all remaining U.S. gold holdings available to them. But what this action really did was to remove the last legal limitation on the amount of paper money that the Federal Reserve System may issue.

Finally, the American government has pressed for the creation by the International Monetary Fund of "special drawing rights," SDR's, or "paper-gold," to "supplement" dollars as international reserves. The only thing this purposely complicated scheme would do would be to adulterate reserves still further to make it possible for nations to issue still more paper money against these paper SDR's which are declared with a straight face to be just as good as gold if not better.

All these schemes are unsound, and in the end all of them will prove futile. The truth is that no solution of the monetary problem, national or international, will be possible until inflation is stopped, and that it will not be stopped as long as we have the welfare state.

CHAPTER IV

THE HIGH COST OF WAGE HIKES

It ought to be obvious that minimum-wage laws hurt most the very people they are designed to "protect." When a law exists that no one is to be paid less than $64 for a 40-hour week, then no one whose services are not worth $64 a week to an employer will be employed at all. We cannot make a man worth a given amount by making it illegal for anyone to offer him less. We merely deprive him of the right to earn the amount that his abilities and opportunities would permit him to earn, while we deprive the community of the moderate services he is capable of rendering. In brief, for a low wage we substitute unemployment.

Yet we initiated the folly of a Federal minimum wage law 30 years ago, and we have been compounding that folly ever since. The first Labor Standards Act of 1938 fixed a minimum wage of 25 cents an hour. This was raised to 30 cents in 1939, 40 cents in 1945, 75 cents in January 1950, $1 in March 1956, $1.15 in September 1961, $1.25 in September 1963, $1.40 in February 1967 and $1.60 in February 1968.

In 1938 the average hourly wage in manufacturing industries was 62 cents an hour. In January 1968 it was $2.74 an hour. But our legisla-

tors, not content with this general rise in wages due to more and better tools and natural economic forces, have decided to keep raising the legal minimum wage even faster than the constantly rising market average. Thus the statutory minimum was only 29 per cent of average hourly earnings in manufacturing just before the increase in 1950, but 40 per cent before the increase of the minimum in 1956, 43 per cent before the increase in 1961, 47 per cent before the increase in 1963 and 54 per cent before the increase in 1968. The consequence of this is that the legal minimum wage was pushed up 114 per cent between early 1956 and 1968, though average hourly earnings in manufacturing rose only 55 per cent. Meanwhile the Federal minimum wage has become effective over a far greater range.

The net result of all this has been to force up the wage-rates of unskilled labor much more than those of skilled labor. A result of this, in turn, has been that though an increasing shortage has developed in skilled labor, the proportion of unemployed among the unskilled, among teenagers, females and non-whites has been growing.

The outstanding victim has been the Negro, and particularly the Negro teen-ager. In 1952, the unemployment rate among white and non-white teenagers was the same—9 per cent. But year by year, as the minimum wage has been jacked higher and higher, a disparity has grown

and increased. In February of 1968 the unemployment rate among white teen-agers was 11.6 per cent, but among non-white teenagers it had soared to 26.6 per cent.

In addition to the direct harm done by the minimum wage in creating unemployment among the unskilled, it must bear at least part of the blame for the recent riots in the cities where the unemployed are concentrated.

The statistical evidence showing that the minimum wage has caused unemployment among Negroes and the unskilled is abundant. It is gratifying to report that some of the country's outstanding academic economists—Profs. Yale Brozen, Arthur Burns, Milton Friedman, Gottfried Haberler, James Tobin, to mention a few—have gathered this evidence and presented a conclusive case against a statutory minimum wage. Yet successive Administrations and Congresses have persistently refused to accept their logic or to face the glaring facts.

There are other labor laws, antedating the minimum wage, that have had even worse consequences. In the early 1930's the theory grew up that wages were too low and workers were exploited because there were not enough unions and those that existed had too little bargaining power. The proposed remedy for this was to create more and stronger unions, and the way to do

that was to forbid employers to discriminate against union workers in hiring, promoting, or granting wage increases. Therefore in 1935 Congress passed the Wagner Act, which gave unions the right to "bargain collectively through representatives of their own choosing" and prohibited employers from engaging in a whole list of "unfair labor practices."

The act was completely one-sided, hypocritical, and self-contradictory. On the one hand, it pretended to be two-sided by making it an unfair labor practice "by discrimination in regard to hire or tenure of employment or any term or condition of employment to **encourage or discourage** membership in any labor organization." But immediately following this was a provision declaring that "nothing in this act...shall preclude an employer from making an agreement with a labor organization...to require as a condition of employment membership therein." In brief, the law prohibited an employer from discriminating against union members, but permitted and encouraged (and often in fact compelled) him to discriminate against non-union members.

The Wagner Act proved so viciously one-sided in practice that in 1947 Congress amended it in the Taft-Hartley Act. But the Taft-Hartley Act, contrary to popular impression, changed little of substance. And the National Labor Relations Board has successfully ignored or circumvented

the provisions that did.

The factual situation today is that the compulsory union shop can be forced on employers and workers in the majority of the states. If a union makes an exorbitant demand, the employer cannot simply refuse to meet it. He is compelled by the Taft-Hartley Act to keep "bargaining" with that union and no one else. If he announces that he will regard strikers as having quit their jobs, and will carry on his business by hiring workers to replace them, his plant will be surrounded by pickets to intimidate anyone who thinks of passing through. And because of the legal roadblocks set up by the Norris-LaGuardia Act of 1932, he will probably be unable to get injunctive relief in the courts even from crippling vandalism and violence.

The "right to strike" is interpreted today not merely as the right to quit work, but the "right" forcibly to prevent others from taking the jobs that the strikers have voluntarily vacated. The Taft-Hartley Act, amending the Wagner Act, specifically provided that "to bargain collectively... does not compel either party to agree to a proposal or require the making of a concession." But the employer is in fact compelled to make concessions. He is compelled to make them because unions today enjoy a special license to keep a plant closed by intimidatory mass picketing until their demands are met. If an employer does somehow

succeed in keeping his plant open, and peaceably replacing strikers to carry on his business, the Labor Board is likely to come along years later, as it has done time and time again, and rule that by finally ceasing to "bargain" with the original union that struck he violated the Taft-Hartley Act and must therefore re-employ the original strikers, with retroactive pay to cover the whole period of their unemployment.

Yet this factual situation is ignored by practically everybody as if it did not exist. When a particularly outrageous or disruptive strike halts vital services, and a few Congressmen begin to demand compulsory arbitration, they are told that the government should not intervene but allow the processes of "free collective bargaining" to continue.

It is true that compulsory arbitration is not the solution. But it is not true that the "collective bargaining" taking place is "free." The government is in fact intervening every day through its one-sided laws. It is already a participant on the side of the striking union. It is granting special immunities to the union to use intimidation and violence. It is putting special compulsions on the employer to yield to the demands of the union, or to grant costly concessions, for fear of the even more costly or perhaps mortal penalties if he breaks off negotiations with the union members on strike and decides to employ replacements.

By the Norris-LaGuardia Act of 1932, by the Wagner Act of 1935 and the Taft-Hartley amendments of 1947, by loaded decisions pouring out daily from the National Labor Relations Board, and by the failure of local authorities to provide adequate police protection to employers and workers trying peaceably to carry on a struck business, we are daily forcing up wage rates to points that threaten to bring the economy to a halt, unless more money is printed so that demand, prices, and profit-margins can keep pace.

For thirty years we have been in an unending race between the printing press and the demands of the labor unions. Instead of showing any signs of slowing to a halt, the race is becoming more determined and more desperate on both sides.

CHAPTER V

PRICE AND WAGE CONTROLS

When the welfare state spends recklessly, runs chronic deficits, expands credit, and prints more money, prices begin to soar. Invariably the government blames business, especially Big Business, and hints darkly at price controls.

But being a self-styled "liberal" government it begins by suggesting only "voluntary" controls. It draws up "guidelines." Prices of course continue to rise, because the government is printing more money, thereby reducing the value of the currency unit.

The government's next step is to select as its special target some big corporation (or industry consisting mainly of big corporations) and demand that it roll back some price increase it has just announced. The big corporation is selected for attack, of course, because it is easy to arouse popular prejudice against it. It can either be denounced as a monopoly or accused of "administering" prices.

The favorite scapegoat in the United States for the last twenty years or more has been the steel industry. Though the total value of the steel produced yearly in this country amounts to only 2 per cent of the gross national product, the government, whenever it attacks steel prices, contends that steel enters into a multitude of

products, that a steel price increase is "pyramided" throughout industry, and so sets off a chain reaction of inflation. This argument will not bear serious analysis, but is good enough for propaganda purposes.

One minor irony is that though the government publishes a monthly index of consumer prices, and a monthly index of wholesale prices, and that though the former is a weighted average of some 400 selected prices and the latter a weighted average of some 2,000 prices, the monthly government report never tells the reader just how many of these prices rose and how many fell in the month reported. It is true that it sometimes gives partial enumerations. Thus, in its report on wholesale prices for March, 1968, it tells us: "Prices were higher for 110 of the 225 industrial product classes; there was no change for 85 and declines occurred for 30." But if it told us that of the 2,000 individual prices it records of all items, about 1,000, say, went up in a given month, 740 were unchanged and 260 declined, the public would instantly see the absurdity as well as the injustice of the government's selecting one price rise among 1,000 price rises, or even a price rise in one industry out of price rises in 110 industries, for special denunciation and attack.

A rise of nearly all prices, or of most prices out of tens of thousands, indicates the operation of a common cause. That cause is the monetary poli-

cies of the government itself. Prices do not rise today because businessmen have suddenly become greedier than they were yesterday. We may assume that sellers operating either under competition or monopoly were already charging as much as they could successfully get. The problem is to explain why they can charge more today than they did yesterday, or more this year than last year. If nearly all can charge more, this means that some general condition has changed.

Government price control attempts to ignore this change. That is why government price control always works harm. Attempts to hold down or roll back prices, when they do not merely lead to black markets and quality deterioration, must reduce and disrupt production and distort the balance and structure of production. (Artificially depressed prices also, of course, stimulate demand for the items subject to them.)

When the price of one item, say some necessity such as bread or milk, is held below the price that supply and demand would set in a free market, it reduces the comparative profit margin in making that product and soon creates a shortage of that product. This is exactly the opposite result from the one the government price-fixers had in mind. If, in the effort to cure this, the government tries to hold down the prices of the labor, raw materials, and other factors that go into producing the price-controlled product, the price control must

be extended in ever-widening circles, until the government finds itself trying to fix the price of everything.

As there are probably at least 10 million separate prices in the American economy, and as this implies something on the order of 50 trillion cross-relationships among prices, the government sets itself a fantastically impossible task. But this does not mean it cannot do immense harm to the economy when it nevertheless undertakes this task.

It is ironic that even a "labor" government, once it undertakes price controls to try to prevent the consequences of its own monetary inflation, is finally forced to face the fact that it cannot do this unless it is also prepared to control and hold down wages. This is now happening in England. But a government's wage-control orders are enormously harder to enforce than its price-control orders. If the wage-control is real and rigid, the unions simply defy it; so it finally becomes riddled with loopholes and exceptions, which cause the price-control either to do increasing damage to production or to break down.

A special case of price-control is the attempt to hold down interest rates, either on loans to business or on home mortgages. At the beginning this looks easier than other forms of price control. It merely seems necessary to issue more money to increase the supply of loanable funds. But

when interest rates are reduced in this way, two consequences follow. The lower rates encourage more borrowing, which tends to raise the rates again. And the increased amount of money and credit starts pushing up prices and wages. This forces businessmen to borrow still more if they want to continue to buy even the same volume of inventories and employ even the same number of workers as before to do the same volume of business.

And if, as a result of the increased volume of money and credit, prices have risen, say, 4 per cent in the last twelve months and are expected to rise 4 per cent in the next twelve months, lenders begin to realize that when they get 6 per cent nominal interest on their money they are in reality getting only about 2 per cent.

This is one reason why interest rates in the United States in 1968 soared to record high levels. It is precisely the government effort to hold them down that forced them up—just one more illustration of how government controls eventually bring about precisely the opposite effects of those intended.

The present chairman of the President's Council of Economic Advisers, ignoring the fact that unions cannot successfully raise wages or businessmen prices unless monetary inflation permits it, recently called on business and labor to practice "voluntary restraint" and stop raising prices

and wages. But if employers and workers did exercise "voluntary restraint," and deliberately charged less or asked less than they could get in a free competitive market, they would in fact be doing the community a disservice.

The demand and supply of each of thousands of different commodities and services are changing every day. When an increase in the money supply does not falsify the result, the goods and services in most demand rise in price while those in least demand fall. So the profit in supplying the goods in greater demand increases while that in supplying the goods in less demand falls. This causes more to be produced of the goods in more demand and relatively less to be produced of the goods in less demand. Thus the tens of thousands of different goods and services produced in the nation tend constantly to be produced in the proportions in which they are most wanted.

Prices are indispensable signals to producers and consumers. They must tell the truth about supply and demand. "Voluntary restraints"—and still worse government "guidelines"—falsify the signals and disorganize and unbalance production.

Monetary inflation is a dreadful thing. But what does immensely more harm even than the inflation itself is the attempt to conceal or suppress its consequences through price and wage controls.

CHAPTER VI

RUNAWAY RELIEF AND SOCIAL INSECURITY

In the United States, Federal programs to relieve poverty and unemployment first went into effect on a large scale in the Great Depression. The argument was that they were needed only during the emergency. Since then the nation has enjoyed a return of prosperity, an enormous growth in national income, a fall of unemployment to record-low levels, and a sharp decline (by any consistent definition) in the number and proportion of the poor. Yet relief, unemployment insurance, Social Security, and scores of other welfare programs have expanded at an accelerative rate.

In a 1935 message to Congress President Franklin D. Roosevelt declared:

"The Federal Government must and shall quit this business of relief....Continued dependence upon relief induces a spiritual and moral disintegration, fundamentally destructive to the national fiber."

The contention then made was that, if unemployment and old-age insurance programs were put into effect, poverty and distress would be relieved by contributory programs that did not destroy the incentives and self-respect of the

recipients, and that relief could gradually be tapered off to negligible levels.

Let us look first at what has happened to Social Security itself. Since the original act of 1935 there have been constant additions and expansions of benefits. As early as 1939, both the benefit and tax provisions of the basic act were overhauled. The 1939 package added survivors' benefits.

In 1950, coverage was broadened substantially to include about 90 per cent of the employed labor force. (Initially it had been only about 60 per cent.) The length of working time required to qualify for coverage was sharply reduced.

In 1954 and 1956 there were further liberalizations of coverage. Disability benefits were added. The 1956 amendment dropped the minimum retirement age required for women from 65 to 62.

In 1958, benefits for dependents of disabled workers were added. In 1961 the retirement age for men was also reduced to 62, though with a lower level of benefits than was payable at 65.

The 1965 legislation added Medicare for some 20 million Americans over 65. It made a host of other expensive changes. To the traditional Social Security program it added a 7 per cent across-the-board increase in cash benefits to retired workers.

In addition to other changes, the scale of benefits was increased in 1952, 1954, 1958 and 1965.

The 1967 Social Security amendments increased payments to the 24 million beneficiaries by an average of 13 per cent, raised minimum benefits 25 per cent, increased benefits to noninsured persons over 72, and also increased survivor and disability insurance benefits.

The original Social Security payroll tax was 1 per cent of wages up to $3,000, to be paid both by workers and employers. The combined rate of tax is now 8.8 per cent of wages up to $7,800. This will be raised again to 9.6 per cent in 1969.

But nobody can seriously expect even these greatly increased payroll taxes to pay for the liabilities that the government has already undertaken. W. Rulon Williamson, the actuary for the Social Security Board from 1936 to 1947, estimated even before the latest increases that it would take $150 billion more just to take care of those who were already on the benefit rolls, and that it would probably take at least $1 **trillion** to take care of the families of those who are already paying Social Security taxes, but have not yet retired. That estimate doesn't cover Medicare.

What, meanwhile, has happened to the relief programs that unemployment insurance and Social Security were designed to make unnecessary?

In 1937, the first full year in which the initial Federal public assistance programs were in operation, $316 million was paid out to relief clients

under the Federally aided programs. In 1960 the comparable total had increased more than tenfold, to $3.3 billion.

Though the Federal contribution has been mounting steadily during the years, the burden borne by the States and localities has been mounting at an almost equal rate. The amount of public aid alone paid out by the States and localities increased from $624 million in 1935 to $3 billion in 1966. The total of all social welfare expenditures borne by the States and localities alone has grown from $3.3 billion in 1935 to $40.8 billion in 1966, and for 1968 is probably about $46 billion.

The Federal budget lists the total cost of "Federal Aid to the Poor" in 1960 at $9.5 billion. For 1969 the cost is listed at $27.7 billion, nearly three times as much.

These figures include the cost of aid to education, work and training, health, cash benefit payments, and other social welfare services. In the current (1969) fiscal year, the Federal government places the number of persons on direct relief at 8.8 million. This is an increase of 60 per cent compared with the number twelve years ago, though the rate of unemployment is lower than it was then.

The Federal government estimates that there are still about 29 million "poor" by official definition (a family of four with an annual income under $3,335). Not only do the individual programs to

"assist" them become more costly year by year, but new programs are constantly being added, though they overlap and duplicate each other. Upward of 70 agencies have been counted operating some 300 programs for uplifting people.

A detailed account of the waste and scandals that have accompanied these proliferating programs can be found in Shirley Scheibla's recent book, "Poverty Is Where The Money Is."

In addition to specific antipoverty programs, the Federal government's total welfare outlays —including agricultural subsidies, housing and community development, health, labor and welfare, education and veterans' benefits—come to a staggering total for the single 1969 fiscal year of more than $68 billion.

Even yet we have not finished. We must add the $46 billion annual welfare cost that falls on the States and localities, to a grand total of more than $114 billion.

CHAPTER VII

SOAKING THE RICH

Everywhere we turn today we find the welfare state—the state that promises guaranteed jobs, guaranteed incomes, the guaranteed life, security from cradle to grave, the quick if not overnight elimination of poverty. And the principal way in which it undertakes to achieve these goals is to seize from those who have and give to those who have not.

The main instrument it uses for this purpose is the graduated income tax. In the United States this tax has already been imposed for 55 years. In the beginning it seemed innocent enough. The top rate was only 7 per cent. But in 1925 the top rate had gone to 25 per cent; in 1935 to 63 per cent; in 1940 to 81 per cent; in 1945 to 94 per cent. In the tax cut of 1964 the top rate was reduced to 70 per cent. With the 1968 surcharge it is up again to 77 per cent.

In today's world these confiscatory rates are not exceptional. The First National City Bank of New York recently compiled a table comparing the highest marginal income tax rates in fifteen countries. The rates (after rounding out fractions) are:

Italy 95 per cent, United Kingdom 91, Canada 82, United States 77, France 76, Japan 75,

Netherlands 71, Austria 69, Australia 68, Belgium 66, Sweden 65, West Germany 55, Denmark 53, Norway 50, and Switzerland 8.

It would be misleading to assume that these top-rate figures necessarily reflect the overall comparative tax levels in these countries. Italy's 95 per cent rate applies only to incomes above $800,000, whereas Norway's 50 per cent rate applies to all incomes above $13,000. Though Sweden's top income-tax rate is in the lower half of the list, Sweden imposes the heaviest comparative tax load in the world.

What the comparisons do show graphically is how almost universal the soak-the-rich tax philosophy has now become. An elaborate rationalization, on grounds of "social justice" and "ability to pay", has been built up for progressive tax rates since the beginning of this century; but economists are at last beginning to recognize that all arguments in support of progression can be used to justify any degree of progression.

Certainly there is no evidence that the steeply progressive rates have helped the poor. On the contrary, these confiscatory rates clearly undermine incentives, reduce production and capital accumulation, and leave less to be shared by everybody.

The earliest sponsors of the progressive income tax recognized this, but they had other aims in mind. In the Communist Manifesto of 1848, Marx

and Engels frankly proposed "a heavy progressive or graduated income tax" as an instrument by which "the proletariat will use its political supremacy to wrest, by degrees, all capital from the bourgeois, to centralize all instruments of production in the hands of the state" and to make "despotic inroads on the right of property, and on the conditions of bourgeois production."

Progressive rates of income taxation are not necessary to raise great revenues. A simple calculation, based on the Treasury's own figures for 1965, shows that, with the same existing exemptions and deductions, a flat rate of 19.5 per cent would have raised all the revenue raised from the scale of rates ranging from 14 to 70 per cent.

On a similar calculation, if all the rates now above 50 per cent were reduced to that level, then (on the basis of 1965 income tax returns) a maximum of $373 million would be lost. This is not enough to run the government, at present spending rates, for a single day. If all incomes over $100,000 were taxed at a rate of 100 per cent, the maximum revenue gain would be $200 million.

For 1965, 70 per cent of the total income tax was paid by people with adjusted gross incomes under $20,000, for the simple reason that these people constituted 97.5 per cent of all income-tax payers, and that they collectively reported more than 80 per cent of the country's taxable income.

It is not only in the U. S. that the actual revenue yield from the higher income-tax rates is negligible. In Great Britain, in the fiscal year 1964-65, total government revenues were 8,157 million pounds, the revenue from the personal income tax 3,088 million pounds, and the revenue from the surtax 184 million pounds. In other words, the revenue from all the surtax rates (ranging above the standard rate of 41¼ per cent up to 96¼ per cent) yielded less than 6 per cent of all revenue from the income tax, and barely more than 2 per cent of Britain's total revenues.

In Sweden, in 1963, individuals paid first a local proportional income tax averaging about 15 per cent; then on the rest of their income, they paid progressive national taxes ranging from 10 to 65 per cent. A study published by the Swedish Taxpayers' Association found that the basic national income-tax rate of 10 per cent brought in about 70 per cent of total national income-tax revenue; that if the maximum national rate had stopped at 25 per cent, the tax would have brought in 90 per cent of its then revenue; and that if the maximum rate had stopped at 45 per cent, the government would have received 99 per cent of its actual revenue. In short, the study found that the rates between 45 and 65 per cent brought in only 1 per cent of total national income-tax revenue.

The unavoidable conclusion is that the pro-

gressive rates of income tax everywhere, and especially those above 50 per cent, are imposed not to raise revenue, but merely to satisfy vindictiveness and envy.

Yet perhaps the most serious evil of the progressive income tax is that is produces the **illusion** in the overwhelming majority of taxpayers that the "rich"—meaning the people in the brackets above them—are really paying for most of the benefits that the majority get from the government. This illusion is probably shared in the U. S. even by single taxpayers with taxable incomes just above $7,000, who are in fact paying more than the 21 per cent average rate that is yielding the present fiscal 1969 revenue. This illusion leads them to accept complacently a burden of government expenditure and taxation that they would not otherwise tolerate.

Though this aspect of progressive income taxation receives practically no attention today, its menace was recognized as early as 1899 by W. E. H. Lecky:

"Highly graduated taxation realizes most completely the supreme danger of democracy, creating a state of things in which one class imposes on another burdens which it is not asked to share, and impels the State into vast schemes of extravagance, under the belief that the whole costs will be thrown upon others."

CHAPTER VIII

GOVERNMENT UNLIMITED

Since the outbreak of World War I in 1914, there has been an ominous growth in governmental power and intervention not only in the United States but practically all over the world. Woodrow Wilson once declared: "The history of liberty is the history of limitations of governmental power, not the increase of it." This ought to be self-evident. The greater the area of human conduct controlled by government, the smaller the area left to the individual's own control. The greater the government's power to forbid and restrict, the smaller the individual's power to choose for himself.

The growth of governmental power may be measured in terms of dollars spent, bureaucrats employed, or spheres of activity controlled.

In 1914 the Federal government was spending only $725 million a year; in fiscal 1969 it is spending $186 **billion** a year—256 times as much.

In 1967 the number of Federal civilian employees totaled 2,877,000; the number of State and local employees 8,898,000, bringing the number employed in all government units up to 11,775,000.

In 1954 the Hoover Commission found that the Federal government embraced no fewer than 2,133 different functioning agencies, bureaus, de-

partments, and divisions. As Federal expenditures have more than doubled since 1954, and the number of Federal employees increased by 25 per cent, the present agency count may now easily exceed 2,500.

This estimate would be warranted by the known proliferation of Great Society agencies. One calculation in 1967 counted more than 100 new Federal programs enacted by Congress since 1955. In 1968 Congressman William V. Roth and his staff were able to identify 1,571 programs, including 478 in the Department of Health, Education and Welfare alone, but concluded that "no one, anywhere, knows exactly how many Federal programs there are." Even a prominent former interventionist confessed himself appalled by the "fantastic labyrinth of welfare programs" and the way in which the swift growth of federal power is diminishing the significance of the individual citizen.

The growth of government power progressively breeds the growth of still more government power. The 86,000 permanent employees in the Department of Agriculture, to take but a single instance, all have a vital full-time economic interest in proving that the particular subsidies and controls they were hired to formulate and enforce should be continued and expanded. What chance does the individual disinterested citizen, even if he has time to master the facts about the agri-

cultural programs, have in arguing against this particular bureaucratic army of 86,000?

The life of the citizen as worker, employer, enterpriser, investor, or consumer is controlled by scores of Federal agencies. Outstanding among them are the Federal Trade Commission, the Securities and Exchange Commission, the Internal Revenue Service, the Interstate Commerce Commission, the Food and Drug Administration, the Federal Communications Commission, the National Labor Relations Board. All these agencies issue rules and regulations, grant licenses, issue cease-and-desist orders, award damages, and compel individuals and corporations to do this or refrain from that. They often combine the functions of legislators, prosecutors, judges, juries, administrators. Their decisions are sometimes capricious, arbitrary, and unauthorized even by existing law. Yet when they inflict injury on corporations or individuals, or deprive them of constitutional liberties and legal rights, appeal to the courts is often difficult, costly, or impossible.

The steady expansion of governmental powers also breeds nepotism and corruption in government and helps those already in power to entrench themselves—to prolong or perpetuate their hold on power. A New York Times survey of patronage in the city and State (June 17, 1968) found that "patronage has vastly expanded in the last several decades because of the tremendous growth

of government, spiraling government spending, and the expansion of government's discretionary powers to regulate, control and supervise private industry."

Yet arbitrary government power is being multiplied daily by the now practically unchallenged assumption that wherever there is any problem of any kind to be solved, government is the agency to step in and solve it. Government lawmakers or officials either already have or demand the power to tell us just how much oil or sugar we may import, just how many acres we may plant to what crops, just how foodstuffs should be packed and labeled, just how steel and copper and drugs should be priced, just what interest rates should be charged and how they should be calculated, just how automobiles should be made, just what kind of artificial eyes should be permitted, just what one group of people must do and another group must not do, just what groups should be subsidized, and by how much, and just what groups should be forced to subsidize them.

Should anybody be surprised that there has been an appalling growth of crime, an outbreak of riots and a breakdown of law enforcement? The more things a government undertakes to do, the fewer things it can do competently. When the government tries to do everything it must do everything badly.

The essential function of the State is to main-

tain peace, law, and order and to protect the individual citizen against aggression, violence, theft and fraud. More than a century ago Herbert Spencer was pointing out that "in assuming any office besides its essential one, the State begins to lose the power of fulfilling its essential one." As more and more functions are assumed by the state, the truth of this becomes more and more obvious.

This brings us back once again to the warning of the Swedish economist Gustav Cassel more than 30 years ago: "The leadership of the state in economic affairs, which advocates of Planned Economy want to establish, is...necessarily connected with a bewildering mass of governmental interferences of a steadily cumulative nature. The arbitrariness, the mistakes, and the inevitable contradictions of such a policy will, as daily experience shows, only strengthen the demand for a more rational co-ordination of the different measures and, therefore, for unified leadership. For this reason Planned Economy will always tend to develop into Dictatorship."

In more concrete terms, the process usually runs like this: A hundred welfare programs, spending more and more billions, lead to chronic budget deficits, which lead to increased paper-money issues, which lead to higher prices. The government then denounces all sellers as "profiteers" and starts fixing ceilings on individual

prices. Next it is led inevitably into the impossible task of trying to fix all prices and wages, which leads it to setting up allocations and quotas of production for each producer and rationing for each consumer, and so to control of everybody's means of livelihood and survival.

And as Alexander Hamilton once put it: "Power over a man's subsistence is power over his will."

Chapter IX

WHAT WE CAN DO ABOUT IT

If the welfarist-socialist-inflationist trend of the last seven years continues in this country, the outlook is dark. It is a prospect of mounting taxation, snowballing expenditures, chronic deficits, a budget out of control, an accelerating rate of inflation of the kind endemic in Latin-America (at least for the last generation), a collapse of the dollar, increasing world currency chaos, and more and more ruthless price, wage, and exchange controls, leading toward a regimented economy and dictatorship. And if this trend is interrupted temporarily, it may be by riots, assassinations, and a breakdown of law and order.

But it is within our power not only to avert this nightmarish prospect, but to restore order, constitutionalism, limited government, economic and personal liberty, internal peace, and stable prosperity and growth.

The remedies we must apply are implicit in the evils already described. We must halt and in most cases reverse the "remedies" that have brought us to our present predicament. Let us indicate the real cures in the same order as the chapters in which we discussed the disease.

1. We must start reducing the grossly overextended powers of all levels of government,

local, State and Federal. We must start decentralizing power, not only from the Federal government back to the States and localities, but within each level of government, especially the Federal. The powers of the American presidency have grown beyond the ability of any human being to exercise them responsibly and wisely.

The crying need today is not for more laws, but for fewer. The world must be saved from its saviors. If the friends of liberty and law could have only one slogan it should be: Stop the remedies! **Stop the remedies!** Or even shorter: Repeal! **Repeal!**

2. Stop the profligate spending. Stop the deficits. Return to balanced budgets as the norm rather than the exception. Stop the constant increase in the national debt. Stop the inflation.

3. To stop the inflation, the government must stop expanding the issue of paper money and credit.

The International Monetary Fund ought to be dismantled. The Articles of Agreement should at least be amended to remove all provisions that oblige the strong currencies to support the weak —in other words, that oblige the countries that manage their fiscal and monetary affairs prudently to support those that mismanage their monetary affairs altogether; that oblige the "surplus"

countries to support the "deficit" countries; that permit debtor countries to put off payment in gold indefinitely and compel other countries to become or remain their creditors. This means that the "special drawing rights"—"paper-gold"—should never be permitted to come into existence.

The "gold-exchange" standard (more accurately, the dollar-exchange standard) should be liquidated. This means that the United States should stand ready to redeem in gold on demand the present dollar-holdings of foreign central banks, and that these banks should by a self-denying agreement refuse to increase their present holdings of dollars as part of their official "reserves", and provide for at least the gradual liquidation of such holdings.

The U. S. government should abandon all exchange controls, all attempts to forbid, restrict, or penalize foreign travel, or purchases of imports, or foreign investment. Certainly not least, the government should repeal its 35-year-old prohibition on the purchase, sale, or ownership of gold by its own citizens.

The United States should plan for eventual return to a full gold standard. This will probably now have to be by stages. What seems most likely at the moment of writing is that we shall soon find ourselves off even the token gold standard we are now on. We will probably be unable to set up a full gold standard except at a much higher

dollar-price for gold than the present $35 an ounce.

But it is too early to specify all the conditions of such an eventual return to gold. All we can say now is that, as long as the world's money continues on a fiat paper basis, there will be monetary unreliability and unsettlement, if not monetary chaos.

4. Repeal all minimum wage laws. Repeal the Norris-LaGuardia Act of 1932. Repeal or drastically modify the Wagner-Taft-Hartley Acts of 1935 and 1947. Stop legally compelling employers to continue negotiating with unions that are making unreasonable or exorbitant demands. Allow struck employers to try to continue their business peaceably with non-strikers or with replacements for strikers. Forbid all intimidatory mass picketing. Enforce existing common law or written statutes against intimidation, vandalism and violence. Reduce the Taft-Hartley Act to a simple prohibition of discrimination against either union or nonunion workers. If the unions refuse to accept this two-sided prohibition, repeal the law entirely.

5. Let the government refrain from all "guidelines" for prices or wages, all controls of prices, wages, interest rates, or rents, and all threats of such controls.

6. Stop the continuous increase in the national burden of Social Security, housing subsidies, farm subsidies, and the rest of the proliferating "anti-poverty" programs.

Only three or four specific suggestions can be offered here:

Several eminent economists (notably Prof. James Buchanan and Colin Campbell) have shown how Social Security could be converted from its present ambiguous but compulsory mixture of insurance and relief to a voluntary insurance program.

Federal grants to the States and localities to pay for relief and "anti-poverty" programs should either be discontinued entirely or made only to the poorer half or even the poorest fifth of the States. The latter plan would take the political profit out of Federal grants-in-aid.

There should of course be no attempt to seize the earnings of those who work in order to provide "guaranteed incomes" to those who won't work.

All personal relief and assistance payments should be made in the form of repayable loans. This would reduce the applications for relief payments, and at the same time help to maintain the self-respect of the relief recipient. The recipients of relief loans would be under no legal obligation to repay the loans, but as long as they remained unpaid the voting privilege would be suspended.

The army of relief and other subsidy recipients will continue to grow, and the solvency of the government will become increasingly untenable, as long as part of the population is able to vote to force the other part to support it. Such eminent nineteenth and early twentieth century liberals as John Stuart Mill and A. V. Dicey agreed that the franchise should be withheld from the recipient of poor relief as long as he remains on relief. If the fear of offending or the temptation to propitiate such voters were removed, there would be a startling improvement in the quality of candidates for office. The whole tone of our public life would be raised.

7. The graduated personal income tax should be abandoned in favor of a strictly proportional income tax. The argument against the "progressive" tax rate was conclusively stated as long ago as 1833 by the Scottish economist J. R. McCulloch:

"The moment you abandon the cardinal principle of exacting from all individuals **the same proportion of their income or of their property,** you are at sea without rudder or compass, and there is no amount of injustice and folly you may not commit."

It is also clear that no income tax rate above 50 per cent should be permitted. It is prima facie confiscation when a man is allowed to keep less

than half of his earnings for his own family.

We have already seen that the income tax rates above 50 per cent raise negligible revenue, and that even with present profligate spending a flat income-tax rate of 21 per cent would raise all the revenue now being raised from the whole range of rates from 14 to 77 per cent. The desired reform, therefore, could be brought about in a decade by a simple law providing that for each of the next ten years each lowest rate above 20 per cent would be successively reduced to that figure and each highest rate above 50 per cent successively dropped.

8. The present appalling power and omnipresence of government must be forced back within tolerable limits. Traditional liberals since Adam Smith have agreed on only two indispensable functions of government: first, to protect the nation against aggression or invasion from any other nation; and secondly, to protect every member of the community from the aggression, injustice, or oppression of any other member.

Some libertarians would add other functions: the provision of sewage, water, and other health and safety services in cities, the construction and maintenance of streets and roads, and, for national governments, the provision of a trustworthy monetary system, the setting of standards of weights and measures, the providing of certain

kinds of information.

But about the nature and precise limits of these other governmental duties there is considerable disagreement. What can be said with confidence is that every extension of the functions and powers of the State beyond its primary duty of maintaining peace and justice should be scrutinized with jealous vigilance. Precisely because the State has the monopoly of coercion it can be allowed the monopoly only of coercion. Only if the modern State can be held within a strictly limited agenda of duties and powers can it be prevented from regimenting, conquering and ultimately devouring the society which gave it birth.

The solution to our problems is not more paternalism, laws, decrees, and controls, but the restoration of liberty and free enterprise, the restoration of incentives, to let loose the tremendous constructive energies of 200 million Americans.

CUT OUT AND MAIL

ORDER FORM

La Jolla Rancho Press
P.O. Box 704
La Jolla, Calif. 92037

Send _____ copies of LIFE AND DEATH OF THE WELFARE STATE.
(prices on next page)

Payment of $_____ is enclosed (send check or money order).

NAME _____

ADDRESS _____

CITY _____ STATE _____ ZIP _____
(Please print)

California residents add 5% sales tax.

Mail copies of Henry Hazlitt's LIFE AND DEATH OF THE WELFARE STATE to elected officials, newspaper editors, radio-TV pundits, teachers, ministers, friends and relatives. You can mail a single copy of this book at the following postal rates: first class—12c; third class—6c; bulk rate—3.6c.

LIFE AND DEATH
of the
WELFARE STATE

1 copy: 60c
2 copies: $ 1 (.50 ea.)
10 copies: $ 4 (.40 ea.)
30 copies: $ 9 (.30 ea.)
100 copies: $ 25 (.25 ea.)
500 copies: $100 (.20 ea.)

California residents add 5% sales tax.
Order form on back of this page

LA JOLLA RANCHO PRESS
P.O. Box 704
La Jolla, California 92037
(714) 453-1552

H. L. Mencken once said of Henry Hazlitt,
"HE IS ONE OF THE FEW ECONOMISTS IN HUMAN HISTORY WHO COULD REALLY WRITE."



Books by Henry Hazlitt

THINKING AS A SCIENCE
THE ANATOMY OF CRITICISM
A NEW CONSTITUTION NOW
ECONOMICS IN ONE LESSON
WILL DOLLARS SAVE THE WORLD?
THE GREAT IDEA
THE FREE MAN'S LIBRARY
THE FAILURE OF THE "NEW ECONOMICS"
THE CRITICS OF KEYNESIAN ECONOMICS
WHAT YOU SHOULD KNOW ABOUT INFLATION
THE FOUNDATIONS OF MORALITY

A BRIEF INTRODUCTION
TO THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

A BRIEF INTRODUCTION TO THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

© The John Birch Society 1962

(A transcript of a speech delivered during the spring months of 1962 before the Commonwealth Club of San Francisco, the Executives' Club of Chicago and other audiences.)

by
Robert Welch

It takes two full days to tell our story. In fact, a great deal of our present leadership around the country comes from several hundred outstanding business and professional men, many of them nationally prominent and all of them highly respected, who have been kind enough to listen patiently to me for two straight days, in about thirty different small meetings of selected guests invited for that purpose. Compressing this presentation into a half-hour speech is difficult. We shall, therefore, hew to the line as concisely as we can.

II

The John Birch Society was founded in Indianapolis, on December 9, 1958, by the eleven great Americans who met me there, in the first of those two-day meetings to which I referred above. Most of those eleven men are today members of our COUNCIL, which is the top governing body of the Society.

We are very proud of our COUNCIL. Informally limited to thirty men, it has twenty-seven members today, which is the highest number yet reached. And it has been remarked by many of our enemies as well as friends that it would be almost impossible to put together in one group a more imposing list of leaders in the American conservative movement.

The John Birch Society operates largely through local chapters, usually of between ten and twenty members

each. Merely being patriotic or anti-Communist is not a sufficient qualification for membership. Because of our basic objectives, which will be explained presently as well as space permits, we must have associated with us, now and in the future, only men and women of good will, good conscience, and religious ideals. For we are striving to set an example, by dedication, integrity, and purpose -- in word and deed -- which our children's children may follow without hesitation.

It is this character, quality, and caliber of our membership which so amazes everybody, on first learning the truth, after having heard about us mainly from utterly distorted reports in so much of the press and over the air. Senator Barry Goldwater, although he sometimes criticizes me, has repeatedly stated that the finest people he knows in his state are members of The John Birch Society. Loyd Wright, former President of the American Bar Association, recently said approximately the same thing about the members he knows in California. And we could find you plenty of other most highly respected Americans to confirm this appraisal. It is our deliberate and careful purpose to pull together into one group a body of morally good and truly responsible citizens who are proud of each other and of the Society to which they belong.

As of today, May 2, 1962, there are still a few states in the Union in which we have not yet even begun any organizing effort. But in all except those very few we now have from one chapter to over three hundred chapters in each state. We also have a Home Chapter, which maintains contact with its members only by mail. There are now members of this Home Chapter in every state, and the roll of a few thousand includes several hundred of the most influential men and women in our country. Also, many of our new members first

come into the Society as members of the Home Chapter, and are then transferred into local chapters which they themselves help to form, or which are formed by others in their community.

For taking the lead in establishing chapters, and for the supervision and guidance needed to keep them functioning most effectively, we have salaried staff men, called Coordinators. We also have, in many areas, men and women, either retired or with other jobs, who devote large parts of their time and energy to serving The John Birch Society as Volunteer Coordinators. We now have several Major Coordinators, supervising these activities. We shall add further Coordinators, and Major Coordinators, and otherwise increase our organizational strength from the bottom up, as rapidly as we can afford it and to whatever extent it seems wise to do so.

Neither the list of our members, of either local chapters or the Home Chapter, nor their number, is ever given out to anybody. This is, of course, the only basis for all of the descriptive phrases calling us a secret or a semi-secret society. Actually, it is perfectly normal and customary with regard to organizations of almost every kind in American life. If you don't believe it, just try to get the DAR, or the Association of American Physicians and Surgeons, or practically any of the fraternal organizations, to give you a list of their members or tell you how many members they have.

There is an interesting and ludicrous angle to this secrecy charge. We are not publicity seekers, and all of this huge publicity we have had has literally been thrust upon us. For the first eighteen months of the Society's existence, we were going quietly about our business, forming chapters without any fanfare, and

putting people to work for the aims in which we believe. There were several very favorable articles published about us here and there, now and then, from the very beginning, and while we didn't seek these complimentary notices, we never tried to avoid them. But the Left Wing and the Liberal Press were paying no attention. So when, all of a sudden, they did wake up to discover that there was such a national organization as The John Birch Society, which already amounted to something, they did not put the fact that they had never heard of it before down simply to their own sloppy and distorted viewing of the American scene, but immediately began to shout about the Society being secret. And simultaneously the thought came to them that they could convert this former ignorance on their part into a benefit by using the charge of secrecy as a weapon to harm us. And they have kept on using the description more or less out of force of habit, even after its silliness has been pretty well recognized by everybody.

Just how ridiculous the charge of secrecy really is becomes apparent from the facts. Our whole comprehensive presentation of the background, methods, and purposes of the Society is set forth in our Blue Book of about two hundred pages, which anybody in the country can buy without the slightest trouble for two dollars. Our activities are all planned for our members in our monthly bulletins, which are not only obtainable by anybody, but which for several consecutive months this past winter we ourselves sent regularly to every newspaper in the United States, daily and weekly. We discontinued the practice solely because of the cost and waste involved; and all any newspaper has to do now to get a copy of any bulletin free is simply to write a separate note requesting it.

Anybody who really cares can easily arrange to hear our tape recordings or see our film presentations. At

one desk near our switchboard, in our Home Office, we have every publication of the Society in neat piles, and people we never saw before and never expect to see again stream in and buy different items from our switchboard operator all week long. And all anybody has to remember, to order any of this same material by mail from anywhere in the United States -- or abroad, for that matter -- is simply The John Birch Society, Belmont 78, Massachusetts. Such mail orders pour in all of the time, and are filled in perfectly routine fashion. We even have what we call a Special Packet, for five dollars, which includes the Blue Book, a number of sample bulletins from different months, one or two copies of our monthly magazine, American Opinion, and samples of our other printed materials.

Actually, we regularly report to our members, and hence to the public, far more about ourselves than do most other organizations even remotely in the same category. With regard to our size, for instance, we reported rather fully in our December 1961 Bulletin, because it marked the third anniversary of the founding of the Society. Bringing one part of that report up to date, we now have about thirty-five Coordinators in the field, who are fully paid as to salary and expenses, and about seventy who are volunteers as to some part or all of their salary and/or expenses. We have forty-four people in our Home Office in Belmont. Our growth has been very solid, as best shown by the fact that, throughout all of 1961, under the incredibly intensive and extensive abuse to which we were subjected, our total resignations amounted to only two or three percent of our membership, and we averaged adding that many new members every week. And we certainly expect our growth to continue just as surely and solidly throughout 1962, and in the years to come, until we eventually have the million members -- of fervent patriotism and unassailable character -- which is our goal.

III

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY is named in honor of one of the greatest young men that America has produced.

John Birch was a Christian missionary, from a farm near Macon, Georgia, who was in China when we entered World War II. His heroism, accomplishments, and nobility of character were to make of him a legend which the Communists could not allow to live.

On July 4, 1942, John Birch officially joined General Chennault's forces in Chungking as a volunteer. He organized Chennault's intelligence service, rose to the rank of Captain in the United States Army, and served with unsurpassable bravery and brilliance throughout the war. He was frequently referred to, by both his associates and superiors, as the most important single man in our forces struggling against the Japanese in China.

Ten days after V-J day, while in uniform, on a peaceful and official mission for our government, John Birch was brutally murdered in cold blood by our "allies," the Chinese Communists. This was on August 25, 1945. He thus became probably the first American casualty in that third World War, between the Communists and the ever-shrinking "free world," which is still being waged against us seventeen years later; a relentless war of which there is no end in sight.

You had probably never heard of John Birch before our Society came into the limelight. This is simply because the Communists in Washington planned it that way. It took five years of persistent and determined effort on the part of his parents, aided by Senator Knowland and many other good patriots, to pierce the blanket of oblivion which had been so brazenly thrown over his life

and death by Communist sympathizers in our government. As the Saturday Evening Post pointed out, in a long editorial on January 22, 1955, based on my small book, The Life Of John Birch: "Amazingly, there were in Washington responsible officials who were willing to suppress news of the murder of an American officer, apparently to prevent the American people from rising in their wrath and vetoing further appeasement of communism."

John Birch was killed by typical Communist tactics, as a part of typical Communist strategy, in a typical Communist-style war -- a continuous undeclared war in which our enemies observe no rules of international law, of civilization, or of human decency. He commanded no armies, headed no government, converted no nations to his creed. His impact would have been of transient memory and comparatively small importance, had not that impact occurred at a time and in a way to supply particulars from which momentous generalizations can properly be projected. With his death and in his death the battle lines were drawn, in a struggle from which either Communism or Christian-style civilization must emerge with one completely triumphant and the other completely destroyed.

Partly for these reasons, but even more because John Birch -- in all of his short but outstanding career -- so typified the best of America, we have named our organization in his memory. If we rediscover some of our sounder spiritual values in the example of his life, recharge our determination from the spark of his courage, and learn essential truths about our enemy from the lesson of his murder, then his death at twenty-six ceases to be a tragedy. For in a full lifetime he could not have accomplished more.

IV

Next, as to our purposes. THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY is a group of Americans who have voluntarily joined together:

(1) To combat more effectively the evil forces which now threaten our country, our lives, and our civilization.

(2) To prevail upon our fellow citizens to start pulling out of the deepening morass of collectivism, and then climb up the mountain to higher levels of individual freedom and responsibility than man has ever achieved before.

(3) To restore, with brighter lustre and deeper conviction, the faith-inspired morality, the spiritual sense of values, and the ennobling aspirations, on which our western civilization has been built. The long-range objective of the Society has been summarized as less government, more responsibility, and a better world.

We are digging far more deeply into the problems we face, however, and building far more solidly in our coordinated effort to overcome the destructive forces around us, than can be indicated by the brief outline of our purposes given above. In the more complete presentations -- as in the Blue Book, for instance -- we have attempted: (1) To outline the nature and the frightening advance of the threats against our nation, our religion (all religion), and our civilization; (2) to evaluate these dangers, and place them in their proper perspective, against the backdrop of world history and the rise of western civilization; (3) to set forth a positive philosophy and program to which men of good will, religious ideals, and humane traditions may rally with

confidence and determination; (4) to offer leadership which can make the dedication of such men and women more constructive and more fruitful; and (5) simply to describe in detail the organization, function, and procedures of The John Birch Society.

Since defeat of the Communist conspiracy overshadows all other objectives at the present time, our action program for the near future breaks down into ten categories: (1) Dissemination of Americanist books and pamphlets as widely as possible; (2) increasing the circulation and readership of the best Americanist periodicals; (3) enlarging the audiences of Americanist commentators and newscasters on radio and television; (4) making more effective use -- through better planning, direction, and coordination -- of the weapon of letter writing; (5) organizing Americanist fronts for many different purposes, including the widespread use of petitions in some instances; (6) waking up the American people to the seriousness of our danger by exposing, wherever possible, the pro-Communist activities of Communist sympathizers; (7) making it more difficult for hundreds of pro-Communist speakers to appear before thousands of unsuspecting audiences without at least some identification as to their slant and background; (8) making Americanist speakers available for audiences which are now, simply by default, at the mercy of pro-Communist lecturers; (9) supplying encouragement and renewed hope and determination to anti-Communist refugee groups throughout our country; and (10) carrying on an educational campaign on the political front, so that our members will understand better -- and can help their fellow citizens to understand better -- the issues and candidates offered to them by all political parties.

We are already seriously engaged in all but two or three of those areas of activity. And we shall expand

our efforts into every one of the ten fields just as rapidly as we can.

V

Now of course these efforts have brought down on our heads the massive anger and abuse of the Communists and of their allies, plus all of the good citizens whom -- as always -- the Communists can beguile into doing their work for them. There are several things about The John Birch Society which disturb and even frighten the Communists very much.

(1) First, even with our present comparatively small size we have been able to exert some visible influence as a brake on pro-Communist moves and measures.

(2) In our primary task of getting books and pamphlets which tell the truth out to the public, to wake up more good American citizens to what is really happening, we have been doing an increasingly effective job.

Since we agree that it is better to light one candle than to curse the darkness, we have brought out, in dollar reprints, twelve of the "smothered books" of the past twenty-five years which together tell a fairly complete story of what has really been happening. We have offered these twelve reprints together as a set, called ONE DOZEN CANDLES. During the month of December we sold approximately ten thousand sets of these books. We are still selling them, along with a lot of others. And the Communists don't like it. There is nothing they fear so much as the truth.

(3) The third big worry of the Communists and their sympathizers about us is our potential for the future. It is perfectly obvious that if we can keep on growing as we are, until we have as many members throughout the country as there now are Comsymps, we shall

be able to rout the whole Communist conspiracy because of having truth, morality, American traditions, and the vast bulk of the American people, on our side.

And (4), a really big worry for the Communists is that, because of our organizational structure, they have not been able to get inside The John Birch Society in such manner as to split it into factions, diffuse its purposes, and bog it down in internal disputes, as they do to most other anti-Communist groups.

We are perfectly willing to have this structure described as monolithic. A monolith is a pretty firm body. Our members all know, and new members immediately find out, that far from exercising any coercion or pressure over their thoughts or actions, we repeatedly remind them never to do anything recommended by our bulletins if it is contrary to their own judgment or consciences. They also know that we are fighting for the preservation, restoration, and gradual improvement of the American republic, and that a structure designed for the protection of a completely voluntary association like The John Birch Society, from which any member can resign at any time, has no application to government.

But the Communists tear their hair over this firm organizational structure of ours, which they cannot get at, and which gives us an assurance of permanence and tightly knit strength that other anti-Communist organizations do not have. So they rant and rave about our authoritarian body, and with typical Communist tactics accuse us of exactly those things they themselves are doing but which we most assuredly are not. The whole difference can be summed up very neatly in just one point, which you might keep in mind whenever you hear somebody abusing The John Birch Society as being like the Communists. The point is this:

If a Communist disagrees often enough and continuously enough with what he is told to do, they put a bullet in the back of his skull. If a member of The John Birch Society disagrees repeatedly enough with a majority of the things we ask him to do, we give him his money back. And we think there is a difference.

And so, beginning in February 1961, the Communists and their sympathizers and dupes launched against us an attack which, for reach and extensiveness, has probably never been equalled in American history. As the 75-page booklet issued by the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee showed, the Communists have been making The John Birch Society bear the main brunt of the whole Moscow directive of December, 1960, that anti-Communist groups must be destroyed. As the same booklet emphasized, some parts of this attack on us have not been equalled anywhere for the viciousness of its falsehoods since the worst diatribes of Hitler's Goebbels in the 1930's.

But of course the Communists could never impose the tyrannical rule of three percent of a population over the other ninety-seven percent -- which they repeatedly do -- unless they could inveigle anti-Communist leaders of that other ninety-seven percent into unwittingly doing their dirty work for them. Deceptively appealing to every motivation in human character, from sordid selfishness to "practical politics" to misguided idealism, they have beguiled a lot of very good Americans into attacking us too, and have thus thrown the whole American anti-Communist forces into that snarling confusion which serves Communist purposes so well and is so vitally necessary to their success. We have taken it all in stride as well as we possibly could, and shall do all we can to minimize the friction and bring about greater cooperation and understanding among all anti-Communist groups and leaders.

But the Communists' plan, of course, is to divide and destroy. And the fervor and thoroughness with which they have continued to guide and spur on this attack on ourselves, through their publications, all the way from the People's World in San Francisco to Pravda in Moscow, can perhaps most easily be shown by these facts. The most official Communist publication in the United States is The Worker, published in New York, in which the line is laid down for the faithful. During the last six months of 1961 there was, we believe, only one issue of this weekly which did not contain an attack somewhere in its pages on The John Birch Society; and a number of issues contained as many as six or seven separate attacks on us at that many different places. While in Moscow itself, where all publications are "official," the attacks on us just since the first of this year -- when we began keeping tabs -- have included the following: In Pravda, January 11, February 7, March 11, and early in April (we do not have a translation of this one yet); in Ogonek, January 14; in Za Rubezhom, February 10; in Trud, February 8; in Literaturnaya Gazeta, February 22, March 10, and March 17; and in Izvestia, February 23 and March 2. With results in this country, direct and indirect, that are amazing to behold.

For more than a year the Communists have gone all out to liquidate The John Birch Society. They have had plenty of help from other sources, goodness knows. So they become decidedly and understandably annoyed when, instead of rolling over dead, we go on becoming visibly stronger month after month. As to just what form of vicious attack we should expect from them next, your guess is as good as ours.

VI

Finally, let me summarize for you in one short paragraph all I have tried to say about the function and pur-

poses of The John Birch Society. You and I do not hold this inheritance of ours in fee simple, as our lawyer friends would say, but are merely tenants for life in this environment for human life which was created for us by our ancestors and bequeathed by them to us. But in The John Birch Society we feel that today our generation is rapidly dissipating and abandoning, rather than improving, the material, the political, and the spiritual assets of our marvelous legacy. We are determined to do everything honorable within our power to save for our children and their children this wonderful country and humane civilization which we ourselves inherited. And to that end we ask the help of men and women of good will and good conscience everywhere.

NOTICE

These reprints are available in quantities of any size, large or small, at ten cents per copy.

For a far more thorough introduction to The John Birch Society, we suggest that you buy and read our

SPECIAL PACKET

$5.00

It contains the *Blue Book*, the *Life of John Birch*, a number of our most important monthly bulletins, and other carefully selected materials. All prices include prepayment of postage. Order from

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY, *Belmont 78, Massachusetts*

$1

THIS IS THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

By G. Edward Griffin

AN INVITATION TO MEMBERSHIP

ABOUT THIS BOOK

This book is the result of two documentary films written and produced by Mr. G. Edward Griffin. The printed text is drawn largely from *This Is The John Birch Society*, which is an in-depth presentation of the Society's ideological principles, its program of action, and its long-range objectives. The photographs and descriptive captions are taken from *A Visit to The John Birch Society*, which is a pictorial tour of the Society's home office facilities and operations in the field.

In order to accommodate a program length of less than two hours, it was necessary to delete certain material from these films. In this printed transcript, however, the entire ideological presentation has been restored to its original content. The addition of comprehensive footnotes makes this a most valuable reference for further study and discussion.

THIS IS THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

By G. Edward Griffin

AN INVITATION TO MEMBERSHIP

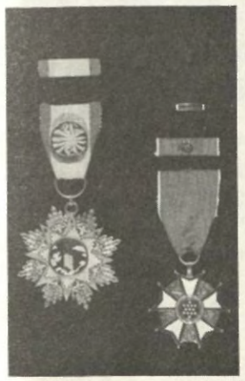
American Media

Box 1365, Thousand Oaks
California 91360

Second edition
Copyright © 1972 by G. Edward Griffin
All rights reserved
International Standard Book Number
(ISBN): 0-912986-04-2

Printed in the United States of America





General Claire Chennault, Commander of the famous "Flying Tigers" in China during World War II, pins the Legion of Merit on Captain John Birch. From the Chinese government Captain Birch also received the Banner and Cloud, the highest possible commendation ever given to a non-national.





John Birch was a young American missionary in China when war was declared between the United States and Japan. He joined the Armed Forces under General Chennault and carried out dangerous missions deep behind enemy lines. His sincere friendship for the Chinese people and his devotion to their cause earned for John Birch their deep respect and unhesitating loyalty. Because of his dedication and bravery, he soon became a hero and a legend in his own time.

John Birch had been outspoken in his opposition to Communism. Undoubtedly he would have provided strong anti-Communist leadership in post-war China. But he was murdered by Chinese Communists only a few days after the end of the war.

In his life, John Birch exemplified the best of American qualities and traditions. In his death, there was the symbolic beginning of World War III; a deadly conflict between the forces of Americanism and Communism that still rages around us today. It is for this reason that the Society was named in his honor.



Part I

THIS WE BELIEVE

Ladies and Gentlemen: For the benefit of those who will be watching this presentation on film, allow me to repeat for everyone a most sincere welcome into our home. Your interest in The John Birch Society, as evidenced by your presence here, is deeply appreciated. And because of this presumption of interest on your part, I've put together an in-depth presentation. Which, I suppose, is merely a subtle way of preparing you for the fact that I'm going to be talking for quite a while. But the subject matter *is* large. And, assuming you didn't come here merely to be entertained, there's no other way to provide the information you want.

To narrow the field as much as possible, let me begin by explaining what ground I do *not* intend to cover.

First of all, I will not talk about the spread of Communism, foreign policy, riots, campus disorders, assaults against police, drug abuse, pornography, crime, or taxes. My topic is not the many problems that confront this nation. It is, hopefully, the *solution* to those problems.

Secondly, it's not my goal to make conservatives, anti-Communists, or activists out of anyone who doesn't already consider himself to be such. I have no illusions about my ability to deliver a single lecture which can reverse the attitudes of a lifetime. My realistic goal is not to *sell* the principles and program of the Society, but, merely, to *identify* them and to *expound* them.

Next, it's not my purpose to pressure or embarrass anyone into joining The John Birch Society. That's not how it's done.

Most of us became members only after considerable thought and study, and we expect that others will follow the same pattern. Naturally, we would be more than delighted if the non-members present did decide to join with us. That almost goes without saying. As a matter of fact, I would like all of you to consider this presentation as an open invitation to The John Birch Society. But your private response to that invitation must be entirely voluntary, and there will be no embarrassing pressure of any kind.

And, finally, I'm not going to try to answer the many charges that have been leveled against The John Birch Society. I realize that, at one time or another, you have all heard that the Society is fascist, secret, un-American, extremist, anti-Semitic, racist, even Communist. But I learned a long time ago that it's a useless waste of time trying to answer these charges. First of all, the list is endless. They make up new ones faster than you can answer the old ones. Secondly, if I were to take that approach, you might learn a few of the things The John Birch Society is *not*, but you still wouldn't know what it *is*. So, instead of approaching this subject from the negative point of view, I prefer the positive. If I can succeed in explaining what The John Birch Society *is*, then you'll understand quite well, indeed, what it is *not*.

So let's turn, now, to the basic question: What *is* The John Birch Society?

To answer that question, I've devised a definition which, although entirely accurate, will hardly satisfy you when you hear it. Nevertheless, here it is: "The John Birch Society is a voluntary group of men and women who have joined together to promote, more effectively, the principles in which they believe, in accordance with a plan of action, designed to overcome the opposition against them." Now, what's *that* all about? It doesn't tell us very much, because there are three questions yet to be answered: What *are* the principles in

which they believe? What *is* the plan of action? And what is the opposition brought to bear against them? The answers to these three questions will tell us almost all there is to know about The John Birch Society. So let's take them in turn, one-by-one.

To explain the principles in which we believe, it will be necessary to divide them into four categories: political, economic, social, and religious.

As far as our political principles are concerned, usually we're described as conservatives. We don't particularly like the word "conservative," because it sounds rather miserly and stingy—especially when compared to the word "liberal" which sounds so much more generous and humane. But the shading of the word isn't our only objection to it .We could live with that so long as it accurately described our point of view, but it does *not*. Today's "conservatives" are the people who wish to conserve and expand the present programs that now dominate our government and our nation. We are not among *those* ranks, I can assure you. We do *not* want to conserve the present system of high taxes, deficit spending, expanding welfare programs, foreign aid, leniency to criminals, no-win wars, and ever-increasing government controls. These are the jealously guarded bastions of liberalism. Yesterday's liberals are the conservatives of today.

The debate—or the dialogue, as it is now called—is not between conservatives and liberals. It goes back in history long before those words were ever invented. The opposing points of view properly are identified as *individualism versus collectivism,* and their champions are called *individualists* and *collectivists. These* words have meaning. They accurately identify the political thoughts they represent. The members of The John Birch Society consider themselves to be individualists, and here are the differences between the two, as we see them.

First of all, the individualist believes that the rights of the individual must not be obliterated by the desires of the collective or the group. The collectivist, on the other hand, believes that the group is more important than the single person within it, and that the individual must be sacrificed, if necessary, for the greater good of the greater number.

The individualist believes that with rights, come responsibilities. And, since we insist on individual rights, therefore, we accept the principle of individual responsibility rather than group responsibility. We believe that every man has a personal and direct responsibility to provide, first for himself and for his family, and then for those outside his family who may be in need.

The collectivist, on the other hand, declares that the individual is not personally responsible for charity, for raising his own children, providing for his aging parents, or even providing for himself, for that matter. This is a group function of the state, of government itself. As a matter of fact, this is always one sure way to spot who is an individualist and who is a collectivist. The individualist wants to be free to do it himself. The collectivist wants the government to do it for him. He is enamored by government. He idolizes government. He has a fixation on government as the ultimate group mechanism to solve all problems. The reason is that government is the one group that can legally force everyone to participate. It has the power of taxation, backed by jails and force of arms, if necessary, to compel everyone to fall in line.

And this leads to the third difference between the two groups. Simply stated, the individualist believes in freedom; the collectivist believes in compulsion. Let me give a few illustrations.

As stated a moment ago, we believe that every man has a personal responsibility to provide for himself, if he can, and

for his dependents. This means that, routinely, we should all set aside a portion of our current earnings for the inevitability of unemployment through sickness, accident, or retirement. But, as individualists, we also believe that we should be free *not* to do this, if, for whatever reasons, we prefer to act in some other manner. If we wish to live to the full extent of our income and plan to depend on our children or other relatives in our old age, or if we choose to take our chance on a greater income in later years, or even if we choose, consciously, to fall back on charity as a way of life, for whatever reason, we believe that a person should be free to choose his own course. We have no right to *force* him to comply with our ideas of what he should do.

By contrast, the collectivist says that, since some people don't have the brains or the will-power or the desire to save on their own, let us pass a law and use government to *force* them. There must not be freedom of choice in this matter, otherwise there'll be many who won't do what we know they should do.

This same contrast can be seen in the area of charity. We believe that every man has a personal responsibility to be generous to those in need. But, as individualists, we also believe that a man should be free *not* to be charitable if he he doesn't want to. If he prefers to give to a different charity than the one we urge on him, if he prefers to give a smaller amount than what we think he should give, or if he prefers not to give at all, we believe we do not have any right to gang up on him and force him. We may try to persuade him to do so. We may appeal to his conscience to do so. But we may not *force* him to do so, either directly by mob violence, or indirectly by the ballot box. In either case, the principle is the same. It's called stealing. True charity is the voluntary giving of your *own* money. Government charity is the giving of someone *else's* money, which, of course, is why it's so popular.

And so, the individualist believes that every man should be charitable, but that compulsory charity is not really charity at all. It's merely legalized theft. Therefore, he believes that every man must be free in this matter to act or *not* to act, as *he* sees fit.

The collectivist believes just the reverse. He proclaims that, because there are some who will not be charitable as we think they should be, let us pass a law and use government to *force* them. Let's not call it stealing, though. Let's call it welfare.

For one additional illustration to round out the point, individualists believe that every man should be free to join a union in order to gain bargaining power and be more effectively represented with his employer. But we also believe that he should be free *not* to join a union if he doesn't want to. If he feels that a particular union doesn't represent his best interests, or that the union leadership is corrupt, or that it's spending his dues money to promote political programs contrary to his choice, or, for whatever reason, he should be free *not* to join a union if he doesn't want to.

The collectivist, of course, replies that unions are good. Therefore, let us pass a law making it illegal for an employer to hire a non-union man. In this way, we will use the power of government to *force* any man who wants a good job to join the union. He must not be given freedom of choice.

And so it goes, on almost every conceivable issue in which the end result generally is conceded to be desirable. As individualists, we believe in freedom of choice. The collectivist, inevitably, turns to the coercion of government force.

We hear a lot of talk today about right-wingers, left-wingers, extremists, and moderates. So let's turn, now, to the question of where The John Birch Society stands in the political spectrum.

The political spectrum concept, if it has any meaning at all, is a measurement scale showing all the variations in government, ranging from zero at one end to 100% at the other. The extremists at the zero end would be those who advocate no government at all, the anarchists. The extremists at the other end would be those who advocate *total* government. And who are they? The Communists, of course, but also the Nazis, the Fascists, and any others, no matter what they may *call* themselves; if they advocate total government control over the people, they are all, by definition, *totalitarians*. Communism and Nazism are *not* opposites.

As you recall, the official name of the Nazi Party really was the National Socialist Party. So, whereas Nazism advocated national socialism, Communism advocates *international* socialism. Whereas Nazism promoted race hatred, Communism promotes *class* hatred. Whereas Nazism directed all industry and commerce by government controls over the managers, Communism controls all industry and commerce by confiscating it first and then appointing the managers. And that is the *total* difference between the two systems. Call it Right or Left, it makes no difference, they're both at the *same* totalitarian end of the political spectrum.

But where does The John Birch Society fit into this picture? Aren't *we* supposed to be the extremists? That's what we hear constantly. Well, the truth of the matter is, we turn out to be the real middle of the roaders. Not that we think that's any particular virtue in itself, but we are just as opposed to the extreme of anarchy as we are to the extreme of totalitarianism.

In essence, anarchy and totalitarianism, also, are the same. Under anarchy, the strongest individuals inevitably will rule over the weak with all the ruthlessness of the totalitarian. The only difference is the size of the dominion. Under anarchy, instead of one large despotism, there are many small ones. Freedom is dead in either case.

Because of this fact, the "linear" concept of the political spectrum gives way to a "circular" concept in which both extremes, anarchy and totalitarianism, join together. Regardless of which concept is used, however, the Society believes in the principles of limited government and opposes any movement which tends to polarize in the extremes, be they separate or joined.

As members of The John Birch Society, we recognize that government is absolutely necessary for any orderly society. But following the dictum that government, like fire, is both beneficial *and* dangerous, we believe in the concept of *limited* government. And we believe that the Constitutional Republic created by our Founding Fathers is the best *form* of limited government that has yet been devised by man.

To understand why we feel this way, it will be necessary to define the word "republic" and to point out the differences between a republic and a democracy.

The Society has been accused widely of being "undemocratic," of being "against democracy," and, actually, this is true. The problem lies in the fact that the word "democracy" has two meanings. As commonly used today, it's generally accepted to describe our American concept of free elections and representative government. But it has a classic definition which is not nearly so flattering. During the debates surrounding the Constitutional Convention, the framers of that document made it very clear that democracy was the worst possible form of government, leading always to mob rule and anarchy, and then to despotism and dictatorship. They said, in no mistakable terms, that they were *not* establishing a democracy in America, but a republic. As a result, the word "democracy" doesn't appear anywhere in our Constitution. And when we pledge allegiance to our flag, it's to the *Republic* for which it stands, not the democracy.

All of this was clearly known to students of American history until fairly recently. The big change came when we were thrown into what was called "the war to make the world safe for Democracy." And ever since, Americans have been increasingly accepting the new meaning for democracy and forgetting the old meaning for republic.

We would be quite content to accept the new definitions and forget the old except for the fact that nowhere in the new vocabulary are there words which can be used to convey the old meanings. If we wish to discuss the differences between a republic and a democracy at all, we simply have no choice but to return to the older definitions that existed prior to World War I.

Democracy is a form of government based upon the principle of majority rule. Period. End of discussion. Now, that's not very complicated. Majority rule. It's easy to understand, easy to sell to the masses, and, I might add, *deadly!* For example, what would you call a lynch-mob? *That's* majority rule. There's only one dissenting vote, and he's at the end of the rope. That's pure democracy in action!

"Ah, but wait a minute," you say. "The majority should rule. Yes, but not to the extent of destroying the rights of the minority." And now, Ladies and Gentlemen, we are no longer describing a democracy, we are speaking of a republic.

A republic is a *limited* democracy. It's a form of government based on the principle of *limited* majority rule, limited so that the minority—even a minority of one—can be protected against the whims and passions of the majority.

How do you protect the minority from the majority? You write down a set of rules on a piece of paper. You say "This we can do. That we cannot." At the top of the paper you write the word "Constitution." Then everyone agrees to follow the rules no matter what the temptation. And when you're finished, you've created a Constitutional Republic.

Notice that the entire function of our Bill of Rights is to spell out in detail the many ways in which the majority, acting through government, must not be allowed to infringe on the rights of the minority. The First Amendment sets the pace with the words: "Congress shall pass no law," and then the document proceeds to explain that Congress, even though it expresses the will of the majority, shall not deny the minority the right of free exercise of religion, freedom of speech, peaceful assembly, the right to bear arms, and others. Congress shall not. *The majority shall not.* This is the meaning of a republic.

And it didn't just happen that way accidentally. Our Founding Fathers knew exactly what they were doing. Remember that interesting exchange of letters between Thomas Jefferson and a friend who had criticized him for being distrustful of men with political power? Using the same argument we hear so often today, the friend asked, "Have you no faith in the men we elect? Have you no confidence in our government?" And remember that beautiful reply? Jefferson said: "Confidence is everywhere the parents of despotism. . . . In questions of power, then, let no more be heard of confidence in man, but bind him down from mischief by the chains of the Constitution." There, in a single phrase, is the best summary you'll ever find of a republic: Binding men down from mischief by the chains of the Constitution. And this is the concept of limited government in which the members of The John Birch Society believe.

To translate this general concept of limited government into something specific and tangible, it follows that the members of The John Birch Society do *not* think that taxes are too high. That's right. Taxes are merely the price of government, and you have to pay for what you get. Every year the American people apparently want more government. They clamor for more services, more benefits, but, oh, how

they complain when the bill comes in the mail. Actually, taxes aren't high enough. For years the government has been spending more than it takes in. This deficit spending has caused inflation. Inflation has undermined the value of our money. It has decreased the incentive to save, and has shifted a heavy portion of the cost of government onto our senior citizens and others on fixed incomes. So, taxes really should be higher to pay for the government we have.

We believe, therefore, that taxes are not too high, but that *government is too big!* That's the problem. If we ever really want to reduce taxes, we'd better get the horse back in front of the cart and begin to talk about ways and means to reduce the size and reach of government, itself.

All right, so much for our political principles. Now let's turn to the economic principles in which we believe. To describe ourselves accurately in this category, it would be proper to say that we are—are you ready?—laissez-faire capitalists.

I never knew what a laissez-faire capitalist was until I went to college. And then, I learned that it was a big, fat man—with an expensive cigar, a diamond stick-pin in his cravat, spats on his shoes—sitting on a huge bag of money squeezed out of the exploited toil of frail women and starving children. Seriously, if anyone had told me then that he was a capitalist, much less a *laissez-faire* capitalist, I would have thought that he was the meanest, greediest man in the whole world. It wasn't until many years later that I found out what those words actually meant. And, lo and behold, I was shocked to discover that *I* was a laissez-faire capitalist!

Laissez-faire capitalism merely means the private ownership of property—in other words, owned by the people instead

of by the politicians—with a minimum of government interference in the market place. Laissez-faire means, simply, "Let the people do it."[1]

Now, let's get one thing straight right here. There are very few rich people in The John Birch Society. I wish we had more, but we don't. Most of us come from the lower and middle economic levels of the nation. In other words, we're part of that broad middle class that still works for a living and pays the taxes. Frankly, we would like to *become* rich if we could, and I think most of you would, too. Even our socialist friends would like to be *rich* socialists. They don't object to wealth. It's just the *other* guy's wealth that bothers them. As a matter of fact, some of the richest people in America *are* socialists. Millionaires like Cyrus Eaton, Nelson Rockefeller, and others of the same political bent are not capitalists. They're just rich socialists. The amount of money they have means nothing. What makes a person a capitalist or a socialist is what he *thinks*, not what he *has*. The members of The John Birch Society *think* laissez-faire capitalism!

The desire to become rich, of course, is by no means our only motivation for promoting free enterprise, nor even our *primary* motivation. We're quite aware that, in spite of our best efforts, most of us will never accumulate vast wealth. But it's our firm conviction that laissez-faire capitalism not only makes it possible for some to enjoy the true luxury of riches but, more important than that, it enables all the rest of us to raise our standard of living far in excess of what is possible under any other economic system. And this is the key.

1) This is to be distinguished from protectionist capitalism which rejects open competition in favor of government intervention and protection in the market place. Historically, monopoly has been made possible only through government granting special economic advantages to one group over the others; government land-grants for railroad right-of-ways, protective tariffs for imported oil or steel, closed-shop laws, special law loopholes or subsidies to give groups with political influence an unnatural advantage over their competitors. Obviously, this is contrary to the current myth about free-enterprise causing monopoly, but, nevertheless, the record clearly shows that the undesirable monopolies of history—past and present—are born not out of free-enterprise, but out of government favoritism. That's why it's not enough merely to advocate capitalism. To describe a system of government non-interference in the market place, we must use the phrase laissez-faire or *free enterprise* capitalism.

No one wants to see people go hungry or live in poverty. And the one thing that collectivists and individualists hold in common is their desire to produce a system that will raise the level of the poor. Their differences lie, as always, in how to achieve this goal. The collectivist is not very complicated in his approach. He looks around him. He sees some very rich people living "high on the hog." He sees poor people with barely enough to get by. He remembers the old Robin Hood movies and, eureka, he's got the solution! Take it from the rich and give it to the poor. What could be simpler than that? It's the perfect solution, except for one minor detail. It doesn't work!

One reason why it doesn't work, never has worked, and never *can* work, is that the rich just don't have enough to go all the way around. For instance, on the international scene, we know that the United States, by comparison to the rest of the world is a very rich uncle. Yet, if we had some magic device for converting everything of value in this country into cash and then dividing it equally among the people of the world; if we could tear down every building brick-by-brick and cash them in—including the value of the labor, if we could cash in all the machines, roads, automobiles, TV sets—everything except the clothes on our backs, do you have any idea to what extent we would raise the standard of living of the people of the world? They would be allowed to eat and dress and live like we do in this country for about one week. And then it would *all* be gone.[1]

If all the millionaires in America were taxed 100% of their incomes each year—not a single penny left for themselves—it would run the federal government for less than thirty-nine hours. In fact, if all the income were taken from those making only $25,000 a year or more, if they were allowed to keep

1) For the basic statistics upon which this projection was made, see "LBJ Glimpses the Millenium," *The Chicago Tribune*, reprinted in *Human Events*, May 9, 1964, p. 1.

nothing for themselves, it would still run the government for less than seventy-two hours.[1]

Now, when you consider these facts, several things become rather obvious. First, it's the little guy who's paying most of the taxes. And, secondly, it always *will* be the little guy who pays most of the taxes, because, even if we take it *all* away from the rich man, there just isn't enough to do the job.

The point is simply this. You cannot help the poor by pulling down the rich. It may make you feel better to do so. You may envy the wealth of others. You may resent the attitude and behavior of those with wealth. You may feel that they don't deserve it. You may be a politician who knows you can always get votes by promising to soak the rich, but if your concern really is only for the poor, then you're wasting your time. You cannot help the poor by pulling down the rich.

How, then, *do* you help the poor?

Well, first of all, individualists recognize that there is no utopia. There will always be those who, for a variety of reasons, will be unable to produce: infants, the sick, the lame, the mentally retarded. And we also recognize that the only way for these unproductive individuals to live at all is off the surplus of those who *do* produce. That's basic. The problem before us, then, is how to expand the surplus. Unless we can do that, the poor shall stay poor, no matter how much we *wish* to help them.

Following this in sequence then, how do we expand the surplus? How do we achieve a situation in which each productive human being becomes increasingly *more* productive? The answer, of course, is that the productive individual must be given some incentive for making an increased effort, for working harder, or longer, or for investing in tools. Few people

1) See "If Tax Bite Rose to 100%," *U.S. News and World Report*, June 3, 1968, pp. 72-73. Also see "Little Man Pays," by Congressman Ed Forman, *Human Events*, May 9, 1964, p. 15.

choose to work unless they are motivated by some incentive outside of the work itself.

There are four kinds of human incentive: fear (the motivation of the slave), hate (the motivation of the victim), altruism (the motivation of the philosopher), and fourthly, desire for reward (the motivation of everyone). Of the four, the desire for material reward is, by far, the most powerful and sustaining incentive for most people.

It follows therefore—and please note this carefully—the degree to which government taxes away the material rewards from those who produce in order to give to those who do not produce, is the degree to which government destroys the incentive to continue producing; and, hence, is the degree to which it reduces the surplus and hurts those who must live *off* that surplus, the very people, supposedly, it's trying to help.

We all know of cases where the progressive income tax, for instance, has discouraged a wealthy businessman from expanding his business. The man says to himself, "Why should I take on a new business venture? It would only mean more work and more headaches. And why should I risk my capital? I *could* lose *everything*. On the other hand, if I did everything right, made *no* mistakes at all, the government would only take most of my profits anyway, so why do it?" And *he doesn't* do it. Which means there's one more business never begun, one more factory never built, thousands of jobs never created, millions of dollars never added to the surplus. And who is hurt by this process, the rich man? Of course not. True, he may not become quite as wealthy as he would otherwise, but he continues to live very well, indeed. In the final analysis, government manipulation of the market place *always* hurts the poor far more than the rich. And this is a fact of life the collectivist never seems to understand. Minimum wage laws

are a classic example of this phenomenon. Every time Congress raises the minimum hourly wage rate, untold thousands of marginal workers—the handicapped, the very old, the unskilled—lose their jobs. In 1967, for instance, when the government raised the minimum wage to $1.40 per hour to help those in the lower wage brackets, over a half million such workers lost their jobs. Their employers simply couldn't afford to pay the new rate. As a matter of fact, thousands of small businesses were forced to close down and go out of business altogether because of the government's action. Thus, not only did those in the lower income brackets lose their jobs, but some of those in the higher brackets, as well. But since they were skilled workers, they had little difficulty finding new jobs. As always, it is the marginal worker, the poor, the handicapped, that are always hurt most by the very government programs which, supposedly, are for their benefit.[1]

The collectivist approach always is to divide up the existing economic pie into equal shares, to make sure that no one gets any larger or smaller piece than anyone else. Of course, you may have noticed that those in charge of dividing the pie usually wind up with a larger piece for their "equal" share. This, by the way, is one of the great contradictions between Marxist theory and practice. In theory, Communism is a classless society. Everyone, supposedly, belongs to the same class with no economic differences or privileges. Yet, in practice, in every country where Communism has come to power, the Commissars and cadre of the Communist Party live like kings, while the workers and peasants continue to struggle for the bare necessities of life.

The individualist recognizes the fact that, under *any* system, someone is going to have more pie than others. The

1) See "Jobs That Were Lost When Minimum Wages Went Up," *U.S. News and World Report*, July 10, 1967, pp. 71, 72. Also "Wage Law Blamed For Job Losses," *L.A. Herald Examiner*, Aug. 14, 1967, p. A-16.

only question is, who is it going to be? Should it be the politicians and bureaucrats who divide the pie? Or should it be the people who have worked to *make* the pie? If the dividers of the pie get the larger piece, then the producers slow down, and there's less pie for everyone. But, if the producers are allowed to keep what they produce and dispense the surplus as *they* see fit, then they'll work harder and longer, they'll invent, they'll invest, and they'll produce more pie than you've ever dreamed was possible, and there'll be *more* for everyone. And then, those who have even the smallest pieces out of the larger pie, will end up with more pie than those who are stuck with equal pieces, so-called, out of the *smaller* pie.

Now, that's a lot of pie for an analogy, but it's an accurate summary of the humanitarian function of the free enterprise system and the reason why, in less than 150 years, this nation sprang up from a hostile wilderness and became the envy of the collectivist Old World.

Of course, the free enterprise system no longer functions in America. We're kidding ourselves if we say it does. We've returned to the womb of the Old World concept. We're traveling now almost entirely on momentum. Daily we see an expanding government destroying the incentive of its citizens to continue producing. And daily we approach the end of the line.

But the voter of today is told nothing of this. He is told that we are living in a free enterprise system, that all the economic problems and failures are traceable to that. Capitalism is in crisis, he's told, and the only solution is to replace it with socialism. Good grief, it was replaced with socialism years ago! The failures of today are socialist failures. Not capitalism, but *socialism* is in crisis, as it always has been.

Over a hundred and twenty years ago a French economist by the name of Frederic Bastiat wrote an essay entitled *The Law*. It contains one of the clearest and most compelling

statements of political philosophy that you'll ever find. In straight-forward language and logic Bastiat proves beyond all doubt that the proper function of government is to protect the lives, liberty, and property of its citizens, but not to provide for them. To *protect and not to provide*. For in order to provide for some, it must first take from others. And once it has been granted the power to take from some and give to others, then it becomes a potential mechanism for legalized plunder. The control of that mechanism becomes highly coveted by individuals and groups who wish to line their own pockets out of the taxes taken from someone else. They attempt to bribe politicians, or buy their own way into office, or form into pressure groups with powerful lobbies at the seat of government. Everybody wants in on the "take." Businessmen clamor for tariffs and price-fixing laws so they can charge higher prices. And when the consumers discover what's going on, instead of calling for the elimination of all such government favoritism, they merely start demanding that they get theirs, too. Labor unions clamor for minimum wage laws, farmers nuzzle up to the trough and demand price supports, the unemployed want benefits, families want apartments, students want grants, colleges want subsidies. The entire process spirals around and around until, finally, everyone is plundering everyone! And in the end, when taxes skyrocket to the point where there's nothing left to plunder, the whole system collapses, and the game is over. All that's left is the plundering mechanism, itself—total government—and freedom is lost.

This process described by Bastiat over 120 years ago is exactly what's happening in America today. And his warning about the end result of that process constitutes still a third reason why we champion the free enterprise concept. Even if collectivism were *not* morally wrong, even if it did produce a higher standard of living, we would still oppose it, because freedom is more important than prosperity.

To resist a tyranny, you must be independent of that tyranny for your subsistence. If the government provides your food, your clothing, your shelter, your education, your job, your medical care, your retirement, then the government controls *you* most effectively, indeed. If that government should ever become tyrannical—and they have a way of doing that in history—then, you've *had* it, my friends.

We believe that one of the greatest lessons of history that so desperately needs to be re-learned by the American people—our forefathers knew it well—is this: *Anytime a government is powerful enough to give the people everything they want, it is also powerful enough to take from the people everything they have*. You cannot have one without the other.

Let's turn, now, to the social principles in which we believe.

Because we are individualists and accept the concept of personal responsibility for ourselves and for our dependents, therefore, we view the family as the basic unit of society, secondary only to the individual, himself. All totalitarian regimes, whether of ancient Sparta or modern Peking, all of them strive to destroy the close-knit family in order to remove any loyalties that might be higher than to the state, itself. They don't like competition. Totalitarians would prefer no family units at all if they could force that on the people. The communes of Red China or Haight-Ashbury are ideal for their purposes. But almost the same results can be achieved even within the institution of matrimony, if only the people involved can be induced to abandon their parental responsibilities, because the real objective is to remove the family as a possible alternate source of guidance and support. If the family is weak, then, in time of need, people have no choice but to turn to the state for help. And if the home can be turned into nothing more than an eat-and-sleep club, then the children will be at the mercy of government nurseries and

schools to be carefully molded and indoctrinated by the state, acting as the ultimate parent and provider.[1]

And so, The John Birch Society is committed to the preservation and strengthening of the family, for practical as well as moral reasons.

We believe that all men are equal in the eyes of their Creator, and that all men should be treated equally by the law. But we also believe in freedom of association, that man should be free to select those with whom he chooses to work, to play, or to live. We believe that this is essential to any truly free society. And, besides, it's entirely natural. In general, people prefer to associate with those who share something in common. They prefer to be with those who are approximately the same age, the same educational level, the same interests and hobbies, the same economic strata, the same religion, the same race, the same tastes in entertainment, the same political views. And everyone does this to one degree or another. You do it. I do it.

There's a name for this process. It's called "discrimination." In order to select those with whom you wish to associate, you must, by definition, be discriminate. You must be free to reject those with whom you do *not* wish to associate. Otherwise, you can't choose.

The problem arises in the fact that, today, because of increasing racial tensions, the word "discrimination" has become confused with the word "hatred." But they're not at all the same. Just because you prefer to be with those of your own age group doesn't mean that you have to hate those who are older or younger than you. And this is equally true in the case of race, or religion, or any other category.

1) The Communist viewpoint is succinctly stated as follows: "In carrying the burden of tending to the home and caring for the children, individual mothers bear a responsibility that properly falls on society and government." *New Program of the Communist Party, U.S.A: Second Draft*, March, 1968, p. III-35.

Furthermore, we believe that government has absolutely no business attempting to dictate the social relationships between individuals and groups. We find no constitutional basis for this, no moral basis, and, certainly, no logical basis. For every time government steps in and uses the force of law to rearrange social relationships in accordance with some omnipotent formula, it *always* makes matters worse. It's like trying to stop a dog from barking by throwing stones at him.

Please understand this means we are just as opposed to a *State* government forcing *segregation* as we are opposed to the *Federal* government forcing *integration*. *Both* are wrong. Government should stay out of this matter entirely and leave it up to the individuals involved.

At any rate, inside The John Birch Society we practice what we preach. Membership is open to all races, all religions, all classes. They're all there, and they're all welcome. In some places we have entirely Negro chapters. In others, both Negro and white together. But I can assure you, in every case the arrangement is because the individuals directly involved want it that way. We make no effort to force a prescribed formula on anyone. And, frankly, we think the world would be a lot better place in which to live if others would follow these same social principles.

Let's turn, now, to the religious principles which members of The John Birch Society hold in common. We believe that integrity in government, honesty in the market place, and social harmony, all of these must be based on morality. They can't be legislated into existence. No matter how many laws you write down on the books, if these conditions don't exist in the hearts of our citizens, then they'll never exist in our public life.

Furthermore, we believe that *true* morality is impossible without a firm religious base. When I say true morality, I

mean doing what is right just because it's *right*, and for no other reason; doing what is right, even though it may be to our disadvantage, even though it may cost us our very lives to do so. But, unless our concept of what *is right* stems from religious convictions, unless it comes from a Divine source outside of and bigger than ourselves, who would be willing to make such a sacrifice?

We hear a lot of talk today about the new morality, sometimes called humanism or situation ethics. The concept is that there's no such thing as right or wrong outside the individual, himself. What's right for one, may be wrong for another. What's right today, may be wrong for the same person tomorrow. It all depends on his attitude at the time. What makes us happy or gives us pleasure, supposedly, is right. If it gives us pain, it's wrong, and we must decide on *that* basis only. In other words, do whatever we *want* to do, and call it morality.

That's nonsense, of course. The so-called new morality is merely the old hedonism with a respectable name. While we certainly grant that anyone has a right to be a hedonist, if he chooses, still, we strongly reject hedonism as the controlling philosophy of public life.

George Washington summarized this concept rather well, I think, when he said:

> Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality are indispensable supports. And let us with caution indulge the supposition that morality can be maintained without religion. . . . Reason and experience, both, forbid us to expect that national morality can prevail in exclusion of religious principles.[1]

1) *American Historical Documents*, (New York, Barnes & Noble, Inc., 1960), p. 144.

This is the reason that our nation was founded on the religious principles of deism, a firm belief in God as our Creator. The very first sentence in the Declaration of Independence refers to God as the authority for that action. Further along, we find the words "the Supreme Judge of the universe." And the last sentence declares "a firm reliance on the protection of Divine providence." But the key to *why* this is important is found in the words "all men are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights." You see, if our rights are not endowed by our Creator, what, then is their origin? There's only one other source—the government. If we deny the existence of God in our political institutions, then we must accept the premise that government is the source of our rights. But, if we accept that premise, then we must accept the corollary that, if government can grant rights, it also has the power to take them away. And I don't think many Americans would want to accept that if they thought it through. Liberty is not secure unless human rights are assumed to come from God, not the state.

And so, The John Birch Society does not side-step the issue of religion. We're not founding a new religion. We're not competing with any particular denomination. All we're doing is proclaiming the importance of religion as the indispensable foundation, not only for national morality, but also for liberty. And then, for ourselves, we have drawn a circle of faith that is broad enough for each member to step inside that circle without violating his own personal religious convictions.[1]

1) This is a paraphrase of a passage taken from *The Blue Book* by Robert Welch. "Far from founding a religion, we are merely urging Protestants, Catholics, Jews, or Moslems to be better Christians, better Jews, or better Moslems in accordance with the deepest and most humanitarian promptings of their own religious beliefs. And we are simply trying to draw a circle of faith in God's power and purpose and of man's relationship to both, which is broad and inclusive enough to take each man's specific faith in that circle without violation." P. 151, Western Island's hardback edition. A more thorough understanding of the religious base of the Society may be acquired by a careful reading of Section VII of *The Blue Book of The John Birch Society*.

If I were asked to summarize the principles in which the members of The John Birch Society believe, I would explain it as a dual concept of individualism and morality. *Individualism and morality*. But we also have a slogan which, although slightly longer, says it all very well. Perhaps you've heard it. It is:

> Less government, more responsibility, and, with God's help, a better world.

The next time you hear that slogan, I sincerely hope that my efforts here will have enabled you to hold a better appreciation of the deeper meaning behind those words.





(Above right) The John Birch Society was founded on December 9, 1958, at the conclusion of a two day meeting held in this private home located at 3650 Washington Blvd., Indianapolis.

(Right) The first offices of The John Birch Society were located at 385 Concord Avenue in Belmont, Massachusetts. This 1959 photo was taken after normal working hours. The girl is Ann Adamson. Robert Welch is at his desk.









(Top and bottom left) The complex of buildings that comprise the home office of The John Birch Society is located in the historic setting of Belmont, Massachusetts.

(Top right) The West Coast regional offices are located in San Marino, California. The John Birch Society has grown and prospered to become the largest and most effective force against Communism and collectivism in the entire world.





The John Birch Society is the largest publisher of Americanist material in the world. Many full-sized books are published each year through its subsidiary known as Western Islands. It also publishes two magazines: *American Opinion* and *Review of the News*.

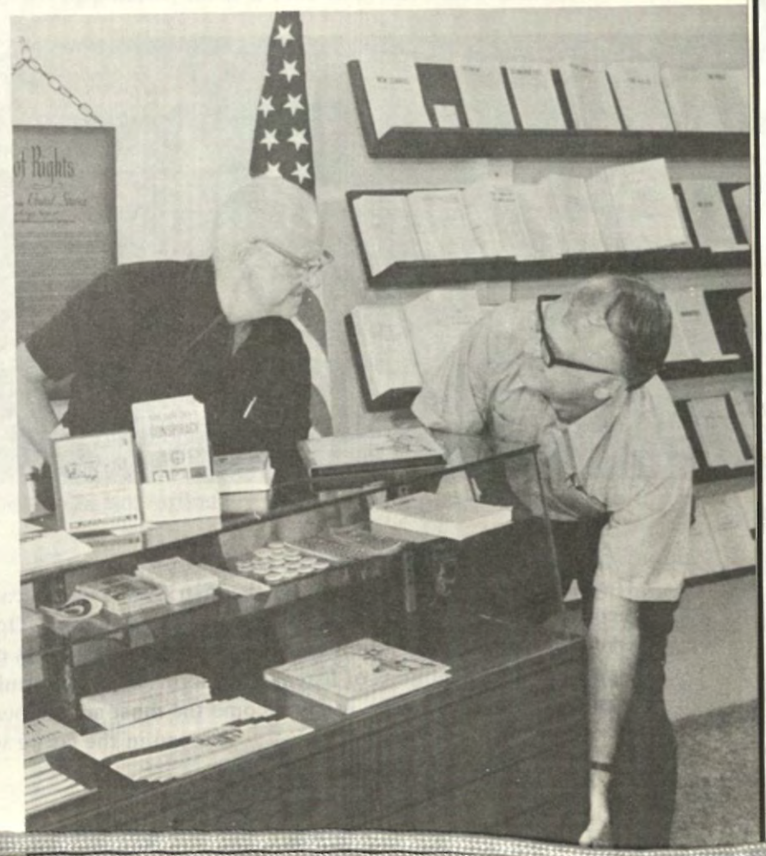
(Above) Mr. Scott Stanley, Jr., Managing Editor for the magazines, discusses up-coming articles with staff members.

(Right) Marian Probert Welch (Mrs. Robert Welch), Assistant Managing Editor, is an integral part of the publications team.









American Opinion Libraries and Bookstores are owned and operated by members, often at great cost to themselves in time and money. But they volunteer their services willingly knowing that, without them, it would be almost impossible for the average citizen to obtain these educational materials. From coast to coast there are over 400 American Opinion Libraries in operation.





The John Birch Society is active in the distribution of educational recordings, motion pictures and filmstrips. The American Opinion Speakers' Bureau has filled thousands of engagements and has placed its speakers before millions of listeners. In terms of sheer number of engagements handled each year, it has become the most active speakers' bureau in the entire world.

Part II

THIS WE OPPOSE

In the year 500 B.C., a Chinese philosopher and general by the name of Sun Tzu declared: "If a man knows himself and knows his opponent, he need not fear a hundred battles. If a man knows himself and knows not his opponent, for every victory he will suffer a defeat. If a man knows neither himself nor his opponent, he is a fool and will suffer defeat in every battle."

Knowing ourselves and the principles in which we believe—as important as this is—is not enough. We must also know our opponent, if we're not to be fools and suffer defeat in every battle. So it's time, now, for us to climb down from our ivory tower of nebulous theory, and turn to the next part of the definition of The John Birch Society that needs to be explained. What is the opposition against us?

You'll notice I haven't even mentioned the word Communism so far, except to relate it to the political spectrum. And it comes as a great surprise to those who are learning about The John Birch Society for the first time to discover that what we're *for* is more important to us than what we're *against*, and that we're not primarily an anti-Communist organization.

To us, Communism is merely the current manifestation of certain forces that have been around for a long time under different labels. Long after Communism has been destroyed and relegated to the dusty pages of history, these same forces will continue to plague future generations as well, but under a new name.

What are these forces? There are two. There are *always* two, and there are *only* two. The first we have already identified: Collectivism, total government. And the second? Amorality, merely a twenty-five cent word for the complete absence of true moral standards of any kind. These are the twin forces of despotism everywhere; past, present, or future. Peel off the label "Communism" or "Fascism" or "Nazism" or any other similar 'ism" from history, and what do you find? Although the exterior form may be different, the essence is always the same: total government over the people, and the abandonment of morality in public life. Collectivism and amorality.

We think it's important to understand this because, otherwise, in our zeal to overcome Communism, the American people could be maneuvered unwittingly into replacing Communism with merely another form of the same thing. In the twenties, the unsuspecting people of Germany became alarmed over the inroads being made in their country by domestic Communism. And then, Adolph, the paper-hanger, came along and said, "Follow me, I'll get rid of Communism for you." So they followed him, and he did get rid of Communism and put in its place exactly the same thing, only under a different flag. The good people of Germany never stopped to ask what Hitler offered behind his anti-Communist slogans and promises of welfare. Most of them had never read *Mein Kampf*. And, of those who did, very few really knew what they were reading. They were unable to recognize those opposing jaws that always constitute tyranny: Collectivism and amorality. And so, in their zeal to avoid tyranny, and through their ignorance of the nature of tyranny, they were manipulated *into* tyranny. And it was all done through the democratic process. Remember, Hitler was voted into power.

Could this happen in America? You bet it could. The process has already begun. In the name of opposing Communism, we are now plunging head-long into collectivism at a rate unparalleled in history. What meaning would a victory over Communism have if, in the process, we embrace total government and abandon our morality?

Yet, the form of tyranny *called* Communism is still very real. It can't be ignored. It's all well and good to understand its basic ingredients, but it still has to be stopped. And there are several reasons for this. First of all, on the ideological plane, Communism stands right in our path, blocking the attainment of our positive long-range goals. We strive for less government, they strive for more. We promote more responsibility, particularly at the individual level; they promote less responsibility, with the individual totally dependent upon the government to run his entire life. We advocate an expanded morality based upon eternal concepts of right and wrong; they advocate the negation of such morality in favor of pragmatism and hedonism. In other words, we move in the direction of individualism and morality, while they move against us in the direction of collectivism and amorality. In order for us to achieve our own goals in this confrontation, we have no choice but to overcome their opposition.

But there's a second reason why we can't just ignore Communism, and it has nothing to do with ideology. It has to do with the practicality of sheer survival. All questions of theory aside, the plain fact is that, if we don't defeat the current form of tyranny known as Communism, we just aren't going to be free—and many of us won't even be alive—to continue the ideological debate. And so, even though the defeat of Communism is not our primary objective, of life-and-death necessity, it becomes our first order of business!

If we are to know our opponent, therefore, we must now answer the question: What is Communism?

Actually, that's not nearly as hard a question to answer as you might think. The Communists themselves give us the



definition. They call it Marxism-Leninism, which means, simply, that Communism is a combination of the ideological teachings of Karl Marx and the organizational strategy and tactics laid down by Vladimir Ilyitch Ulyanov Lenin. All we have to do, really, is understand the ideology of Marx and the tactics of Lenin. And, in spite of the thickness of their books, neither one is very hard to grasp. If you've read the *Communist Manifesto* or *Das Kapital,* then you know that Karl Marx taught only two things: socialism and atheism. Everything else was in support of these two concepts, socialism and atheism. By the way, notice that these are merely different words for collectivism and amorality—we're back to that again—the essential ingredients for *any* tyranny. But the words he preferred to use were socialism and atheism, so let's use those. While Marx laid down the ideological base of Communism, Lenin created the Communist Party and added the physical organizational form.

If you agree with Karl Marx that socialism and atheism are ideologically sound, then, by definition, you are a Marxist. But that doesn't make you a Communist, by a long shot. If, in addition to being a Marxist, you also are willing to join the Communist Party founded by Lenin, are willing to subject yourself to the discipline of the Party, and unhesitatingly follow the organizational tactics and strategy laid down by the Party, then you are a Marxist-Leninist. Then you are a true Communist.

Therefore, if we are to know our opponent, we must know that Communism is not just an ideology, for that would be only Marxism. It is *both* an ideology *and* an organization. Let me repeat that, because it's the foundation for everything that follows. *Communism is both an ideology and an organization.*[1]

1) As Winston Churchill correctly observed: "Communism is not only a creed, it is a plan of campaign. A Communist is not only the holder of certain opinions, he is the pledged adept of a well-thought-out means of enforcing them." *Churchill, The Great Contemporaries,* (Putnam, New York, 1938), p. 168.

Let's turn, now, to the record. This book by Nikita Khrushchev, (displayed to audience) entitled *Socialism and Communism,* was printed in English and published in Moscow.[1] On page 158 Khrushchev said:

> The Communist Party, founded and tempered by the great Lenin, is a powerful force, comrades. Without the Party, we would have been an unorganized mass of people. . . .

Note that line "Without the Party, we would have been an unorganized mass of people." It's a very important concept, and we'll come back to it later.

> All of us Communists are united by the great Marxist-Leninist ideas. The source of our Party's strength and invincibility lies in its indestructible *ideological* and *organizational* cohesion.

Gus Hall, head of the Communist Party in the United States, writing in the September-October issue of *Political Affairs,* put it rather bluntly when he said:

> Years before the appearance of Marxism-Leninism and the Communist Party, there were rebels and heroic rebellions. But they were each doing their own thing. There were theories and there were actions and movements but they were not related . . . very often antagonistic to each other, often cancelling out one another. . . .
>
> The Communist Party in its very essence represents the unity of revolutionary thought and action.

1) Foreign Languages Publishing House, Moscow, 1963.



I repeat, Communism is both an ideology and an organization.[1]

Joseph Kornfeder was one of the original charter members of the Communist Party in America. He joined in 1919, received special training in Moscow, and returned to this country dedicated to the cause of world Communism. Then, like so many others, gradually he began to see through the intellectual deception of the Communist promise. He broke away from the Party and became an equally dedicated anti-Communist.

In 1955, Joseph Kornfeder gave a speech in San Francisco. I would like to read to you one paragraph taken directly from the transcript of that speech. Kornfeder said:

> The true characteristics of the Communist Party are to be found not so much in its theories as in its methods of organization. Keep in mind they are applying a new concept of warfare, the concept of conquering a country from within. . . . How do you conquer a country from within? You conquer it by capturing the organizations that operate inside that country. A labor union, a farm organization or newspaper guild, a teachers association, a political club, a government agency, etc., are considered as power centers. The sum total of these organizations is the sum total of power. . . . The Communist Party . . . organizes inside of these organizations, group by group. To fight them effectively one has to do the same thing in reverse. Mere resolution passing can't cope with that sort of enemy.[2]

1) "The Party of Marxism-Leninism," *Political Affairs*, Sept.-Oct., 1969, pp. 4,5.

2) Symposium, "The Truth About the United Nations," Veteran's War Memorial Auditorium, April 25-30, 1955. Sponsored and published by Congress of Freedom, page 46, (now out of print).

And that's certainly true. Mere resolution-passing, merely declaring loudly that we're against Communism, cannot cope with that sort of an enemy.

Lenin, the founder of the Communist Party, explained it this way:

> The Party is the conscious, advanced section of a class, its advance guard. The power of this advance guard is ten, a hundred times greater than its numbers. Is that possible? Can the power of a hundred exceed the power of thousands? It can exceed it when the hundreds are organized. Organization increases power by tenfold.[1]

This, of course, is the reason that the Communists have been winning around the world; not because they are smarter or because they outnumber their opposition, but simply because they are organized. A handful has had the power and effect of thousands.

Occasionally, someone will say to me, "Aren't you rather silly, worried about Communists in this country when there are so few of them? What harm can such a small group do to a big strong country like ours?" Of course, such people have not done their homework. They have no idea of how Communism actually works. They've heard a little bit about Marxist ideology of Communism, but they know nothing about the Leninist *organization* of Communism. They're unaware, for instance, that in the Soviet Union, even after all these years, the actual number of people who are Communists—members of the Party—is less than three per cent of the total population; in Red China, less than two per cent. But more important than that, at the time of takeover, Communists have

1) Quoted in Political Education; The Communist Party, Part III, an International Publishers pamphlet (Communist), 1935, page 6.



come to power in one country after another with no more than one-half of one per cent of the population, and in some cases, much less than that.[1]

Massive numbers are not important in this phase of the battle. If you remember nothing else I say in this entire presentation, please remember that. Ideology is important, numbers are not. Dedication is important, numbers are not. Organization is extremely important, numbers are not!

In addition to the advantage of organization, our Communist opposition also has the flexibility of being able to resort to completely amoral tactics. Lenin taught that whatever helps to bring Communism to power is moral. The only test is, does it work. If it does, no matter how dishonest, no matter how brutal, then do it.[2]

Of course, the brutality of Communist tactics is a subject entirely too large to be developed here. But, for the record, we shouldn't take lightly the stories told by countless refugees from behind the Iron and Bamboo curtains, heart-rending stories of incredibly inhuman cruelties, tortures, and murders perpetrated by Communist regimes everywhere, past and present. But I'm speaking now, not of the full fact of Communism revealed after it has come to power, but of the process of coming to power through the use of ruthless and cunning deception.

1) "When a Few Communists Start to Seize Power," *U.S. News and World Report*, June 28, 1965, p. 12.

2) Lenin was very clear on this point. He said "We, of course, say that we do not believe in God. . . . We do not believe in eternal morality. . . . We repudiate all morality that is taken outside of human, class concepts. . . . We say that our morality is entirely subordinated to the interests of the class struggle. . . . Communists . . . must regard themselves as free, indeed morally obligated, to violate the principles of truthfulness, respect for life, etc., when it is absolutely clear that a great deal more harm (to Communist objectives) would be done by adhering to such principles than by violating them . . . That is moral, that serves the destruction of the old society." (Composite quote taken from "Tasks of the Youth Leagues," Oct. 20, 1920, *Selected Works of V. I. Lenin*, vol. IX. pp. 475-478, and "Marxism and Morality," *Marxism Today*, London, Jan. 1965, p. 23, and speech at the Third All-Russian Congress of the Communist Youth Organization of Russia, Feb. 10, 1920, as quoted in *Outlawing the Communist Party*, the decision of the First Senate of the Federal Constitutional Court of West Germany, Aug. 17, 1956 (The Bookmailer, New York, 1957) p. 41.

The leaders of world Communism are forever saying that they want peaceful coexistence. "Let our two systems, let our two ideologies compete fair and square," they say, "and let the best ideology win." They always talk about their ideology, but you notice they never say anything about their *organization*. We're not supposed even to notice that they also have an organization with working units established in every country in the world. And while they're talking about open and fair competition between ideologies, their organization is getting ready to pull the rug right out from under us if it can. If they can knock us down from behind by creating social and economic problems—and it's always easier to create problems than solutions, easier to destroy than to build—then they can claim that these domestic problems are proof of the inferiority of our ideology. This is standard organizational procedure for them. Create a problem, blame it on their opposition, and then lead the irate masses in an attempt to correct the very problem they created just for that purpose.

Again, let's turn to the record. Benjamin Gitlow, the author of this book, *The Whole of Their Lives* (displayed to audience) was for many years one of the most important Communists in the entire world. He was General Secretary of the Communist Party, U.S.A., a member of the executive committee of the Communist International in Moscow, and a full member of the Presidium, the very highest ruling group within the world Communist movement. But, like so many others, Gitlow broke away from the Communist Party and became an anti-Communist. After doing so, he wrote this book, telling of his own personal experiences. This is a vital document written by a man who speaks, not from hearsay or from research, but from first-hand experience.

Gitlow describes a series of street meetings that were staged by the Communist Party on the lower East Side of New York. After the crowd had gathered to applaud the Party





speakers, a fight broke out between the Party members and their opposition. The fight was expected. There'd been others in the past, and this one had been planned for with great care. After the Party goon squads had thoroughly beaten their opposition, then here is how Gitlow describes what happened:

> But what the mob below did not know was that on the roof of the tall tenement a number of Communists were hidden in the dark shadows of the building's cornice. Below, another Communist, standing aside from the crowd, waited to give a fateful signal. The signal was given when the Communists controlled the corner with their own people. Heavy cobblestones of granite came hurtling down in the darkness. One Communist, Nick Kruzuk, a simple ordinary worker, was taken to the hospital where he died of a fractured skull. Another, Michael Semon, a hard-working Slav, died in the hospital the next morning.[1]

Gitlow then describes how the murders were used to create martyrs for the Communist cause and to whip up hatred against their opposition who, presumably, were the only ones with motive for such a crime. And then Gitlow says:

> Such premeditated murders of Communists by Communists had taken place before and were considered justified by the political objectives of Communist necessity. They will be repeated—the time, the place and the circumstances will be different—the incentives the same.[2]

1) Gitlow, *The Whole of Their Lives*, Western Islands (Boston, Mass., 1965) p. 238. Paperback edition, The John Birch Society, Belmont, Mass. 02178, $1.00.

2) Ibid., p. 239.

In October of 1965, a high-ranking official of the Hungarian Communist Party defected to the West. He held the rank of Major in the AVH Secret Police. His name was Laszlo Szabo. A few months later, he testified in hearings before the CIA Subcommittee of the Congressional Committee on Armed Services.

During his testimony, Laszlo Szabo explained the operation of a special department within the Secret Police in charge of what they called "dis-information." Really! It was the everyday job of this department of dis-information to manufacture and promote lies that could be useful worldwide against America.

In the center portion ot these Hearings there is a photograph of two editions of *Newsweek* magazine that appeared in November and December of 1963. As you can see, (displayed to audience) the first carries a cover with the picture of Senator Barry Goldwater, and the second, a picture of President Kennedy. The interesting thing about these issues is that they never appeared in the United States. They're complete phonies. They were printed on the secret presses of the "Department of Dis-information" in Hungary and then widely disseminated in Europe, Africa, Asia, and Latin America as powerful weapons of anti-American propaganda. Superior ideology? Hardly! A perfect example of Communist *organization* at work.

After describing this incident in detail, Laszlo Szabo then said:

> Major Janos Furjes, Chier of Special Activities, the unit responsible for dis-information work in the Hungarian service . . . told me they preferred that an item for dis-information should have some real basis, be based on facts, but if I can produce a good idea that does not have any fact, send it in anyway.



Truth is not important if the idea is good. Just send it in. They will make it look truthful, then get it published in some little paper somewhere. After that we Hungarians will hand it out, get it republished everywhere. Who can prove it is not true?[1]

This, too, we must know about our opponent if we are not to be fools and suffer defeat in every battle.

Some years ago, the Communist Party published this little book entitled *A Manual on Organization* (displayed to audience). It contains their detailed plans for disciplining members, collecting dues, operating secret printing presses, organizing cells in factories, colleges and farming communities. It even describes the function of a fraction, a unit smaller than the cell itself. A fraction can be composed of two or more Communists within the same non-Communist organization. Their task is to work together secretly for the purpose of gaining control of that organization, the very process described earlier by Joseph Kornfeder. If you haven't read this—and of course, most non-Communists have not—then it's almost impossible to appreciate the degree to which Communism depends on organization rather than ideology.

But getting back to the subject of tactics, there's a particularly revealing passage here on page 122. They're discussing how to handle former comrades who break away from the Party, and particularly those who have the audacity to testify before Congressional investigating committees. Here's what they say:

> There is only one proper method of exposing the stool pigeons—and that is mass exposure, creating and organizing mass hatred against these rats. . . .

1) Statement of Laszlo Szabo in Hearings before the CIA Subcommittee of the Committee on Armed Services of the House of Representatives, March 17, 1966, pp. 5347, 5348.

1. Photograph the spy, and print his picture in the Daily Worker and in leaflets and stickers. Spread this material in the place where the spy was operating.

2. Organize systematic agitation among the workers where the spy was discovered.

3. Mobilize the children and women in the block in the part of town where the stool pigeon lives to make his life miserable; let them picket the store where his wife purchases groceries and other necessities; let the children in the street shout after him or after any member of his family that they are spies, rats, stool pigeons.

4. Chalk his home with the slogan: "So-and-so who lives here is a spy." Let the children boycott his children or child; organize the children not to talk to his children, etc.[1]

In 1943 the following directive was issued from Party Headquarters to all Communists in the United States:

> When certain obstructionists become too irritating, label them, after suitable build-ups, as Fascist or Nazi or anti-Semitic, and use the prestige of anti-Fascist and tolerance organizations to discredit them. In the public mind constantly associate those who oppose us with those names which already have a bad smell. The association will, after enough repetition, become "fact" in the public mind.[2]

1) J. Peters, *The Communist Party; A Manual on Organization*, (Workers Library Publishers, New York 1935) p. 122. Now available in reprint from The Bookmailer, Box 101, New York 16, N.Y., $1.

2) "Propaganda and the Alert Citizen," *Soviet Total War; Historic Mission of Violence and Deceit*, Vol. 1, published by House Committee on un-American Activities, Sept. 23, 1956, p. 347.





Sp
it
engag

In 1967, I had the privilege of attending the New England Rally for God, Family, and Country in Boston over the Fourth of July. This is an annual affair and, generally speaking, it's just an old-fashioned Fourth of July rally extended over four days. It's pretty well known that most of the thousands who attend each year are members of The John Birch Society. There are plenty of exceptions, of course, but it's widely thought of in Boston as an unofficial Birch Society convention.

On the second day of the Rally, which was held at the Statler-Hilton Hotel, we came down for breakfast and discovered that someone had placed copies of this flyer (displayed to audience) on the windshield of every automobile within several blocks of the hotel. And how many additional thousands may have been distributed elsewhere in town we have no way of knowing. It looked exactly like the flyers the Rally had put out the previous day. It was on the same color of paper, used the same kind of type. Whoever printed this even went so far as to reproduce photographically the official Rally emblem. It reads: "Fifth annual New England Rally for God, Family, and Country. Reveals Mystery Speaker. Sunday, July 2nd. Grand Ballroom. Evening 7:00." Then, in bold type it says: George Lincoln Rockwell exposes Yellow Niggers and Red Jews!"

You can imagine the impact on the innocent people who picked these flyers off their windshields or off the doorknobs of their homes. You can imagine what they thought about the New England Rally for God, Family, and Country and the people who attend it.

By the way, I'm sure there's no doubt in anyone's mind but, just for the record, I suppose I'd better say it. This flyer was *not* printed by the New England Rally for God, Family, and Country. Who put it out? We have no way of knowing. But whoever it was, obviously they considered themselves to

be our opponents. And we must clearly understand what kind of tactics such opponents are willing to use.

In 1961, shortly after I had become a staff Coordinator for the Society in California, I received a letter of inquiry from a Mr. and Mrs. Forrest Rogers in San Diego. So the first chance I had, I loaded up the car with films and books and drove down to San Diego to see if I could form a chapter there.

When I arrived, I called the Rogers on the phone, introduced myself as the Coordinator for the Society, told them I'd received their letter, and asked if they'd like to have me make a presentation in their home. They said sure, come on over. So I did. But when I got there, I noticed a certain coldness and suspicion in their attitude. Of course, I was used to that sort of thing and it didn't particularly bother me because I was well aware of what people had been reading about the Society in their newspapers, particularly in 1961. Most people were convinced that we were a bunch of Nazis with homemade bombs in our pockets. *Naturally* they'd be on their guard.

At any rate, in spite of the obvious reserve on the part of the Rogers that evening, I pretended not to notice and went on my merry way explaining the Society and answering questions as best I could. Finally, I suppose I convinced them that I was OK, that I wasn't going to whip out my swastika, or whatever else they *thought* I was going to do, and then they finally told me what was on their minds.

Mr. Rogers had written several patriotic letters to the editor of the local newspaper, *The San Diego Union*. Immediately he began to receive in the mail a series of postcards. And he showed them to me. They went something like this: "Dear Mr. Rogers: Congratulations on your excellent letter to the editor. You certainly are a well-infomed and coura-



geous American. However, you forgot to mention that the Kennedy Administration is riddled, not only with those Catholics, but with Niggers and Jews, too!" Signed, no name, but merely: "Member, local chapter of The John Birch Society. P.S. Won't you please attend our meetings?" Ladies and Gentlemen, not only had there been no meetings of the Society in the San Diego area, we didn't yet even have *one* active chapter.

I have no idea how many similar postcards have been sent to other people and in other cities. But I do know there have been many. I have no way of knowing how many people have been awakened by a phone call in the middle of the night and heard a voice at the other end: "This is The John Birch Society calling. Get out a' town, ya' dirty Commie!" But I can tell you that there have been thousands of them. And I can also tell you that the impact on those who have received such postcards, letters, and telephone calls has been what you might call rather profound.

In 1966, Governor Scranton of Pennsylvania received a letter on official John Birch Society stationery, carrying the signature of our local Coordinator, threatening to kill him if the United States didn't resume the bombing of Hanoi. Now, as you can imagine, this rather upset the Governor, and he turned the matter over to the FBI. After extensive investigation, enough evidence was gathered to cause a Philadelphia Grand Jury to hand down twenty-seven counts of indictment against one Leonard Fairorth. It turns out that Fairorth had somehow stolen Society stationery and had rather expertly forged the signature of our Coordinator. He had not only threatened to kill Governor Scranton, but also had threatened the Governor's wife, had written a letter threatening to kill

President Johnson, and an obscene letter to Luci Johnson.[1] It also turns out that Leonard Fairorth was a fine, highly respected citizen in the community. As a long-time active member of the American Civil Liberties Union, naturally he'd been outspoken in favor of civil rights, free speech, peace, security, freedom, and all those other good things. It's especially interesting to note that on May 29th of that year, this same Leonard Fairorth had also written a letter to the editor, this time using his real name and his real signature. And the theme of his letter? You guessed it, to condemn The John Birch Society for its bigotry and its underhanded tactics.

Now, Ladies and Gentlemen, this is the kind of opposition brought to bear against us. Not only us, but anyone else who wishes to oppose both the ideology and the organization of Communism. If you ever intend to be a part of the contest, you, too, had better be prepared for exactly this kind of an onslaught.

Before concluding this section, there's one more point that needs clarification. You'll notice that, so far, I've refrained from using the expected phrase "Communist Conspiracy." But, according to the dictionary, a conspiracy simply is a group of two or more people secretly working together using unlawful methods to achieve an evil purpose. Now, are there two or more people in the Communist Party? Obviously. Do they work secretly together willing to use unlawful means? Yes. And is their goal of Communizing America an evil objective? Most Americans would consider it so. If the *organization*

1) See "F.B.I. Accuses City Worker of Threats," *Philadelphia Evening Bulletin*, Aug. 19, 1966. Also "City Employee Held in Threat to Johnson," *Philadelphia Inquirer*, Aug. 20, 1969, P. 1. To keep the record perfectly straight it should be noted that further investigation has revealed the fact that the forged letters were written on plain paper, not official J.B.S. stationery. The one particularly in question, however, was signed with the forged signature of our Coordinator, followed by the words "Regional Representative, John Birch Society, Preservers of Freedom." The letter read, in part, as follows: "We are a lot stronger than you think, and my organization is the only one in the country today that has the guts to fight commie sympathizers like you. Do not consider this an idle threat! If Gerard College ever lets one nigger thru its doors, we will get you and your wife. We may have to ruin your wife first, so you can see what happens to people who try to take away our freedom."





of Communism isn't a conspiracy, then definitions and dictionaries are a complete waste of time.

So let's not be squeamish about words. Let's call a spade a spade—or, to be more exact, call Communism precisely what it is, a world-wide, criminal conspiracy.[1]

1) As Lenin, himself, described it: "... a small tight kernel consisting of reliable, experienced, and steeled workers with responsible agents in the chief districts, and connected by all the rules of strict conspiracy.... Conspiracy is so essential a condition of an organization of this kind that all other conditions—the number and selection of members, their functions, etc.—must be made to conform to it." (*Lenin on Organization*, International Publishers, New York, pp. 74, 99.)

Merely offering speakers and films to the public does not insure that there will be audiences. Someone has to make the booking, rent a hall, create publicity, sell tickets, and then fill that hall. It's hard and thankless work. But members of The John Birch Society pitch in and get that job done, too.



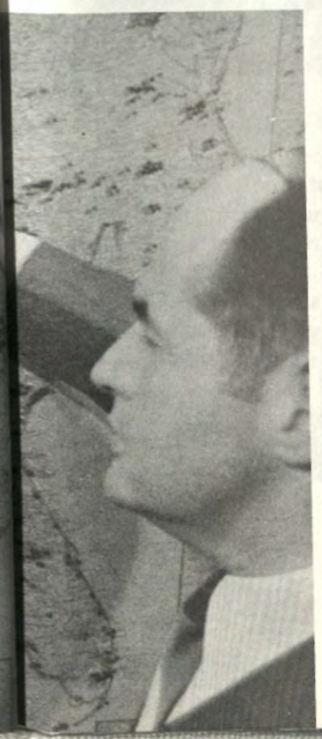












The basic unit of The John Birch Society is called a Chapter. It's a *real* organization, not just a mailing list of supporters and contributors. In a world where most men do practically nothing to advance the principles in which they believe, it takes only a dedicated few to alter the entire course of history.

(Left) Mr. Thomas Hill, Director of Field Activities, maintains records on the progress of each Chapter. In the cities, some pins show the location of as many as ten Chapters each.

















The John Birch Society could not function in the field with
extensive staff services to back it up at headquarters in Belm
and at the regional offices in San Mar

Over 1,000 pieces of mail arrive at these offices every day.
outgoing mail is many times that volume. The Society's pos
bill runs in excess of $40,000 per mo

There are over 225 full-time employees on the payroll wi
adds up to over $50,000 per w

T
re
Spe
its
engage





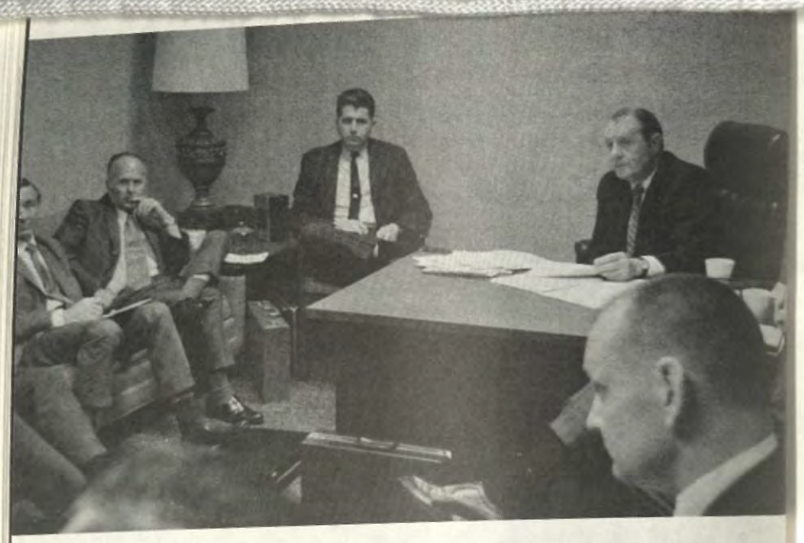




The John Birch Society was founded by Robert Welch. It bears the birthmark of his life experiences and intellect.

The story of Robert Welch is one of a gifted child who learned to read at two, began studying Latin and algebra at five, entered the University of North Carolina at twelve. He is an accomplished mathematician who has worked seriously on Fermat's Last Theorem. He has knowledge of five languages, loves classical poetry, and has written extensively in the fields of philosophy and history.

(Top) The Executive Committee of the Society's Council meets regularly with Robert Welch to help determine policy and programs. Mr. William Grede (Left end) is the Director of that committee.



Mr Charles Armour, Western States District Governor, discusses membership expansion programs with Coordinators in the Los Angeles area.

The John Bircher Society is built upon a tightly knit field staff that offers positive leadership at every turn. Chapter Leaders receive help and supervision from Section Leaders. Section Leaders report to Coordinators who are full-time employees. Coordinators, in turn, are responsible to Major Coordinators whose area may extend over several cities or several states, depending on the concentration of population.

Part III

THIS COURSE WE FOLLOW

Ladies and Gentlemen, to pick up the thread of this presentation where we left off, I repeat the question: What is it going to take to stand against and then overcome a force, which, by definition, is a conspiracy, worldwide in scope, consisting of over forty million members—not counting the billions of people under their control—but forty million disciplined members of the Party, people who identify themselves as Marxist-Leninists?[1]

What is it going to take to overcome an organization with active branches literally in every country of the world?[2]

What is it going to take to overcome opposition which is schooled in the use of completely amoral and ruthless tactics, willing to use any means at all to conquer our nation from within? In other words, what is it going to take to overcome the ideology and the organization called Communism?

The answer is it's going to take a superior ideology *and* a superior organization. We believe that The John Birch Society already has the first, and it's rapidly building the second. The ideology of individualism and morality is far superior to that of collectivism and amorality. But superior ideology is not enough. People have got to come together and work together to promote that ideology, to give it physical form, the body and muscle it needs to survive, to compete, and then to win. As you recall, Khrushchev said, "Without the

1) "The Party of a New Type," *Political Affairs*, (Communist publication) Nov., 1967, p. 3.

2) "A Memorable Gathering," *Political Affairs*, (Communist publication), Aug., 1969, p. 3.

Party, comrades, we Marxists would have been an unorganized mass of people."

Well, that's just as true for us as it is for them. Without organization, we Americanists *have* been truly an unorganized mass of people—all well-intentioned, some hard-working, but totally ineffective as a constructive opposition to Communism.

Without organization we can only react. We can't take the initiative. When our enemies refer to us as "reactionaries," in the past they've been correct. We've always allowed them to make the first move, and then we've reacted in an effort merely to stop them. They've always been able to pick the issue, the time, and the place, the battleground that suits them best, while we've been content merely to defend what they attack. But, as everyone knows, the purely defensive is doomed to ultimate defeat. Isn't it about time we began to take the initiative for a change?

But taking the initiative requires leadership. It requires the formulation of a plan of action. It requires a full-time staff to take that plan, break it down into its component parts, and to distribute those parts over a wide geographical area. And, finally, it requires membership, large numbers of people acting in unison, to pool their resources and put that plan into operation from one end of the country to the other. And, eventually, over all the world.

Without organization, good intentions seldom materialize into action. We're always *going* to write that letter to our congressman or to the editor. We're *going* to order extra copies of books and pamphlets to give to our friends. We're *going* to round up the films and recordings to conduct a study group in our homes. We're *going* to bring a certain speaker into town. We're *going* to organize a parade, circulate a petition, form a committee, make a mailing, take out an ad—all kinds of wonderful and patriotic things. But, how many of them actually get done?

I suppose everyone recognizes the value of organization in accomplishing almost any task, so let's not belabor the point. But, the next question is: what *kind* of organization? Will *any* kind do? The answer, of course, is a resounding "No, *not* any kind will do."

There are two basic kinds of organizations. The first is characterized by the fact that it responds to the will of the majority. Robert's Rules of Order are followed, leaders are elected, and most issues are decided by the ballot. Such groups are called parliamentary organizations. Examples are myriad: the PTA, Rotary, Kiwanis and, in theory at least, our own government. The other type of organization is characterized by the fact that the will of the majority is *not* decisive in determining its course of action. Decisions are made at the various levels of leadership, and the more important the decisions are, the higher the level at which they're decided. These are called monolithic organizations. Examples are an army, a football team, a business, or a religious body. Can you imagine a football team huddled out there in the middle of the field with the quarterback taking a vote for the next play? Or a business conducting a poll among its employees to determine what hours to work and what wages to pay, what to produce, and at what price to sell? Or can you imagine any religious body determining its articles of faith through the process of majority rule? Of course not, because all of these groups are and *should* be monolithic. They couldn't perform their function if they weren't.

One of the most often heard criticisms of The John Birch Society is that it is monolithic—and the word is usually spoken in heavy tones as if to say "Color it sinister." And yet, we have no objecton to anyone using that word to describe us, provided, of course, they really understand what it means. According to the dictionary, a monolith is a solid body, like a rock, without splinter or division. And that's us.

Before going any further, it's important to note the difference between the monolithic form *in* government and *outside* of government. *In* government, because of its coercive nature, the monolith is exactly what we oppose. When government speaks, it has the force to compel everyone to obey, whether they want to or not. This is the essence of collectivism. But *outside* of government, in strictly voluntary organizations, anyone can resign at any time. If we don't like the coach or the quarterback on our team, we get off the team and find something else to do with our time. If we disagree with the religious doctrine taught by our church, we simply change churches. If we disagree with the principles of The John Birch Society, we don't join it in the first place. And, if, after we have joined it, we feel that a particular project is wrong or in poor taste, then we're simply not expected to participate in that project. We concentrate on the ones with which we *do* agree. And, obviously, if there should develop very many points of disagreement, we would drop out. Outside of the self-discipline of our own conscience, there's no means in the world to keep us in or make us work.

Just because we take advantage of group action does not mean we've adopted collectivism. Being an individualist doesn't mean I have to move my piano alone! The difference between collectivism and cooperation simply is that, under collectivism, group action is mandatory. Under cooperation, it's voluntary. And that's precisely the difference between the monolithic form of organization in government, and in The John Birch Society.

All competitive groups must be monolithic if they're to compete. And please note, all groups which have as their purpose the promotion of an ideology *should* be monolithic, because if they're not, then they will lose their ideology.

To illustrate this point, all we have to do is take a look at political parties. Political parties are usually formed in the

very beginning when a group of people who share the same political ideologies decide to get organized in order to be more effective in promoting their common goals. But, instead of adopting the monolithic form, traditionally they accept the parliamentary form. The result? They lose their ideology. I doubt if one person out of a hundred today even remembers what the ideologies were that led to the creation of our major parties. At any rate, whatever they were, they're certainly not the same today. And whatever they are today, chances are they won't be the same tomorrow. They're subject to democratic change, and, consequently, they *do* change every four years. Party platforms are no longer statements of genuine political ideology, but a compromised and amended mish-mash of glittering phrases without meaning. And what little meaning may appear to be there is certainly no obstacle to the politicians who, supposedly, endorse the platform. Once they're elected, they do exactly what they please, anyway. Political platforms are a farce.

The John Birch Society wants no part of this nonsense. The people who join our organization a hundred years from now will be endorsing exactly the same principles for which we strive today. We think those principles are important, and we're determined to preserve them.

It's a fact of life that political parties always tend to drift away from promoting an ideology and end up merely as a mechanism for promoting candidates. Principle is forgotten, and the new all-consuming goal becomes merely to win. Instead of people using the party to promote their principles, the party begins using people to promote its candidates![1]

1) Just to make sure that I step on everyone's political toes, I should add that exactly the same thing will hold true in the American Independent party as well. Right now, of course, everyone is still fairly familiar with the ideology that caused that party to be formed. Not too much change has taken place yet, although movement is visible even now. Consequently, almost everyone within the American Independent Party today is there because they hope to use it as a vehicle for promoting the political principles they hold in common. But ten years from now, twenty years from now, you'll never recognize it. That is, unless it has the advantage of non-partisan forces from the outside strong enough to preserve it from the fate of its predecessors.



This is not to condemn political parties. It's merely to understand them, which we must do if we're to be effective working within them. Although I'll come back to the subject shortly, I've mentioned it here merely to illustrate the point that, unless an ideological group adopts the monolithic form of organization, it will lose its ideology.

Perhaps the most practical reason for The John Birch Society being monolithic is the fact that, if it had not been, it easily could have been infiltrated by Communist agents. Posing as sincere, hard-working anti-Communists, they could have either taken over completely or, at least, bogged us down in endless debates, arguments, committee actions, splinter movements, and parliamentary quicksand. Our enemies are experts at tying anti-Communist organizations into knots.[1] But the agent provocateur has pretty slim pickings in The John Birch Society. If a Communist agent, unknown to us, came into our ranks for the purpose of discovering our secrets, he'd be truly disappointed. We don't have any. If he wanted to bottle things up in committee, he'd be the only member of the committee. Everyone else would continue working as planned. If he tried to promote racism or anti-Semitism or violence or anything else contrary to our principles, we would merely refund the unused portion of his dues and bid him farewell.

So, what does our infiltrator do? While he's a member, he's expected to work. We're not operating a luncheon function. If he wants to stay in and work for our cause, fine. We need all the help we can get. Of course, he would *not* stay in under those conditions. And that is the most effective safeguard—the *only* safeguard—against infiltration by the enemy.

1) When former Communist Elizabeth Bently was transferred from the "surface" Party organization into the underground organization, her superior in the Communist Party told her: "You must cut yourself off completely from all your old Communist friends. If you happen to meet them and they get curious, you will have to tell them that you have dropped out of the Party. You cannot even be known as a 'liberal' and move in progressive circles. Instead, you must pose as ultraconservative. . . ." Bently, *Out of Bondage*, (Devin Adair, New York, 1951) p. 97.

The voluntary monolithic form of organization adopted by The John Birch Society is not only commonplace in our daily lives, not only compatible with the concept of freedom, but it is absolutely essential in our fight against Communism.

Returning to the question of politics for a moment, the structure of The John Birch Society is one of the reasons why it is not and never can be a political group, at least not as the word "political" generally is understood. It is not partisan. It does not identify with any party. But it *is* concerned over political results.

The most effective political action being carried out today, action which brings about tangible results in our legislatures and courts, does not come from the political parties. It comes from the non-partisan groups which, generally, are *thought* of as being non-political: Americans for Democratic Action, the National Association for the Advancement of Colored People, the American Civil Liberties Union, the Southern Christian Leadership Conference, the Committee on Political Education, to name just a few. As a matter of fact, the Committee on Political Education, COPE is perhaps the most effective political organization in the entire country today.

I don't know if you're familiar with how COPE operates, but it's no secret that they throw millions of dollars into political activity carefully designed to favor collectivist candidates, regardless of party. They register voters, endorse candidates, hand out campaign literature, put up billboards, run newspaper ads, put political messages on radio and TV, make films, provide speakers, and maintain a powerful lobby in Washington.

Here's a brochure they put out just prior to the 1966 elections entitled *They're Playing for Keeps*, (displayed to audience) and it's all about us—the "dangerous" Birchers. I'd



like to read part of this to you, because I think it'll give you a better idea of the non-partisan nature of politics today. Remember, this was written by experts at the game. On page two, it reads:

> Out of their crushing 1964 defeat, the extremists, John Birchers and others, learned a valuable lesson. They learned that sound and fury from a national platform are no substitute for planning and organization at the ward and precinct level. They've been planning and organizing ever since.

Well, they're not quite right on that. Actually, we've been planning and organizing long before they ever figured it out. But, basically, they're correct. And then they say:

> The John Birch Society expects to recruit one thousand members in each of 325 congressional districts. The threat can't be laughed off. The Birch Society has a record of making good on its goals . . . and its membership has increased dramatically to a present strength of 80,000 to 100,000. It grows every month. The JBS now has a staff of 250 paid employees, it has five regional public relations offices, it has headquarters on the East and West Coasts. It has a network of 360 bookstores selling to the public. It pours out a river of printed material never before matched in quantity by a splinter political movement. It has a national Speakers Bureau which arranges more than 50 public lectures a month in major communities throughout the nation. It is set up, staffed and financed for full-scale political action.[1]

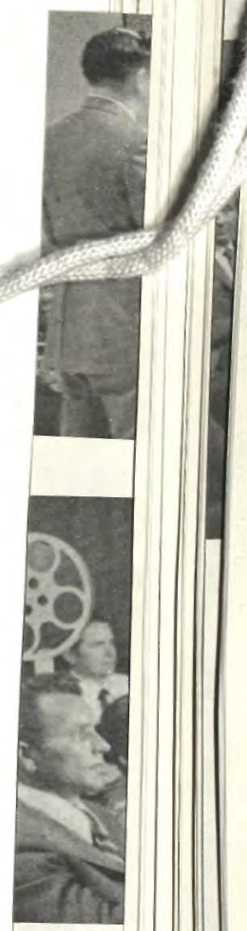
1) COPE Publication #163C, AF of L, CIO Committee on Political Education, AF of L, CIO Building, 815 16th St., N.W.,Washington, D.C.

Understanding that they view political action as non-partisan in nature, then they're entirely correct. We *are* set-up, staffed, and financed for full-scale political action. It's our task, not only to help influence public opinion through educational activity, but also to mobilize the expression of that public opinion in such a way as to force politicians to institute the desired changes in government policies.

Political parties, by their very nature, cannot perform this function. They really operate for only a few months every two years. At election time, the machine is turned on, and, for a few weeks, a tremendous amount of money and effort is expended to elect candidates. Then the machine is turned off, and everybody takes a two-year vacation. By the way, that's one of the reasons why partisan politics is so attractive to many people. It doesn't really demand that much. Anyone can handle a few weeks every two years. But the real political action, the measures that preset the dials on that machine, that determine the direction it'll run when it *is* turned on, this work is done between elections, every year, every month, and every single day. This is why we say in The John Birch Society that education is the means; partisan politics is merely the mechanism.

Please don't misunderstand what I'm trying to say. I'm not suggesting that anyone abandon politics. As a matter of fact, we urge all of our members to become active in the political party of their choice. I'm merely saying that we should clearly understand the weaknesses of politics as well as its advantages, that we need *both* kinds of political action, and that we must place principle *above* party.

The cry of party unity has too long been used by politicians to silence their opposition. Too long have we been manipulated into exchanging principle for the dubious satisfaction of being able to say that we won. Too long have we clamored for a change in leadership, and discovered, after we



got it, that the policies remained the same. The time has come to place principle above party, and to use politicians rather than be used by them.

On several occasions so far, I've alluded to the fact that we can learn much from studying the tactics of our enemies. And this leads many to wonder if it's true what they've heard about The John Birch Society using Communist tactics. Well, believe it or not, it *is* true. Now, before you start jumping to conclusions, let me explain. Not everything the Communists do is wrong, obviously. Just because they've utilized certain tactics, doesn't mean that we shouldn't do so. I suppose when a Communist gets out of bed in the morning he brushes his teeth, but that doesn't mean we have to throw away our toothbrushes. For example, the Communists organize into small working units to facilitate getting things done. So do we. The Communists circulate petitions to Congress. So do we. The Communists set up front groups to mobilize mass action. They have the Committee for the Protection of the Foreign Born, the Sane Nuclear Policy Committee, the Emergency Civil Liberties Committee, and hundreds more. We have our Support Your Local Police Committee, The Truth About Civil Turmoil Committee, The Committee to Restore American Independence Now, The Movement to Restore Decency, and, hopefully, hundreds more in the future. What's wrong with such groups? We call them "Ad Hoc Committees," rather than fronts, but, regardless of what you call them, our committees perform a tremendous service to the people in them, members and non-members alike. They provide an effective vehicle for promoting a relatively narrow and specific objective. They make it possible for people, who disagree with each other on many other things to come together and work together for those principles which they *do* hold in common. And it makes no sense to abandon this tactical concept for the enemy's exclusive use.

You'll notice, however, that the Communists try to conceal their authorship of these groups. *We* go out of our way to make it known. And here is precisely where we part company. The Communists are willing to use deceit, whereas truth is our only weapon. This does not give them the advantage, either. They *must* use deceit. They have no choice. You can imagine how far they'd get if they all came right out in the open, admitted that they were Communists, and then called for a dictatorship of the proletariat, explaining further that we play that game with them being the dictators and us the proletariat. Of course, they wouldn't get to first base, and they know it. So they *have* to cover up, instead, with talk about love, peace, and freedom. But, because they *are* lying, it's possible to expose them. And this is their Achilles' heel.

By comparison, we have nothing to hide. Therefore, we have no reason to lie, and wouldn't want to, even if we could. Truth is a far superior weapon than deceit. It's a weapon which is denied to them. In the end, it will be the decisive weapon which destroys them completely.

The question of organization and of tactics leads to the question of leadership, and in particular, the leadership of the Founder of The John Birch Society, Robert Welch. Someday an appropriate and objective biography of this man will be written. When it is, I think you'll be extremely impressed, not only by his accomplishments, but also by the way in which the opinion-molders of our day have distorted his public image beyond any recognition of the real man. Unfortunately, this is neither the time nor the place for such a study. But, let the record be clear on one thing. As far as the members of The John Birch Society are concerned, our respect and esteem for Robert Welch is so high, it borders close to reverence, itself.

It's been my experience that those who are most critical of what Mr. Welch has said about President Eisenhower—and

this is the main objection that usually comes up—they're the ones, frankly, who have no knowledge of what he *did* say about Eisenhower. And I'm not being facetious, either. Oh, they *think* they know. They've read all about it from our critics. They've seen the quotation marks placed around all kinds of statements, some of them accurate, most of them inaccurate, and all of them taken out of context. But most of these people have never read the book called *The Politician* in which these statements were made and explained. I have met very few who were upset with what Robert Welch said in *The Politician after* they had read it.

So, what more can I say? If you have not read *The Politician*, then get a copy and read it. I think you owe it to yourself. Your very presence here indicates an interest in learning about the Society. And, frankly, it's impossible to have an understanding of the Society without becoming familiar with the writings and teachings of its Founder. So, read *The Life of John Birch*. Read *May God Forgive Us*, and *The New Americanism*. But, above all, read *The Blue Book* and *The Politician*, and then make up your own mind. I think you'll be impressed by what you find. You'll be impressed, not only by the magnitude of the man's intellect and the extent of his knowledge, but also by his record of calling the shots. Time and time again, he has alerted the American people to an unpleasant fact that was important for us to know. Time and time again, he was ridiculed and condemned for doing so by the respectable experts who assured us he was wrong. And, time and time again, tragic events have unfolded to prove that Robert Welch was right, after all.

I think you'll be impressed to learn that, as early as 1958, Robert Welch was telling the American people that Fidel Castro was a Communist. Can you imagine the audacity of anyone doing that in 1958? Why, the experts called him a fanatic, some kind of a nut. As early as 1957, Robert Welch

was warning that the so-called civil rights movement of that time was but part of a larger plan which, if not checked, would intensify frictions between the races and precipitate widespread disturbances and riots from one end of the country to the other. Of course, he was ridiculed by the opinion-molders for such preposterous "predictions of doom." He was called a racist and a trouble-maker. Riots in America? Impossible!

In 1961, Robert Welch launched a nation-wide campaign to "Support Your Local Police." And many people at that time thought it was the most ridiculous thing they'd ever heard. Why not support your local firemen, or your local mailmen? What's so special about the policemen? And Robert Welch explained very patiently that the next step in the Communist blueprint for revolution was to discredit, to demoralize, and to render ineffective our local police. He pointed out that Communism could never come to power in this or any other country as long as the control of the police function of government, which is the *ultimate* function of government, remained in the hands of local citizens. He predicted that Communist influences in this country soon would launch an all-out propaganda war against our local police to discredit them in the eyes of the public. And he explained further that this would be followed by an attempt to bring all local police forces eventually under Federal control. And, as is usually the case, the experts, the opinion-molders scoffed. They called it a fairy tale, merely more rantings of the lunatic fringe. Three years later, of course, no one was laughing.

Before dropping the topic, let me add one more suggestion. You form your own anti-Communist organization sometime; you mobilize 100,000 people nation-wide; you begin to push against the ideology and the organization called Communism, and then just see what *your* public image will look like. And I think you can well imagine what it would be.



Sp
it
engag

In September of 1966, I had the privilege of attending the meeting of the Council of The John Birch Society. During that meeting, Mr. Welch delivered a short address to the Council members and guests present. I was deeply moved by his remarks, particularly one part of the speech, and afterward I requested permission to quote that part if ever I had occasion to do so. Mr. Welch consented, but I've never had a reason before now to repeat what was said that day. And it's quite likely that this is the first time these words have been made public.

Mr. Welch began by describing the predicament of the lady driver who was waiting for a stop-light at a busy intersection. When the light turned green, she tromped on the gas, jerked forward about twenty feet, and stalled the engine right smack in the middle of everything. She tried to start the car again, but all she was doing was flooding the carburetor and running down the battery. Traffic began to back up in all directions. People were honking their horns. And there she sat. Finally, a policeman came over to the car, scowled at her through the window and said, "Lady, will ya' please get that car out a' here!"

At this point, completely frustrated, the woman jumped out of the car and said, "Officer, my driver's license has expired. This isn't *my* car, it's borrowed. I can't get it started. I think it's out of gas. And I wash my hands of the whole matter." And with that, she slammed the door behind her and walked away.

Now, after having described this little scene, here is what Robert Welch then said:

> Sometimes the misunderstanding and frustrations almost tempt me to wish I could act that way about The John Birch Society. I have books I should like to write, places I would like to go, and games

> I should like to play in whatever years there might remain for me. But, Gentlemen, as far as I, personally, am concerned, it can't be done. I could see far enough ahead about the enemy we faced and the nature of the struggle to realize, full well, the extreme unlikelihood of my ever having any real peace or leisure of my own again. And, as Rupert Brooke said, about his rendezvous with death, this is my rendezvous with life, to which I shall be true.
>
> The reason why I could not make myself and some other people happy by just turning over this whole job to somebody else is that I have promises to keep. And those promises have been made, at least by binding implication, to tens of thousands of people who, in reliance on them, have suffered and labored and sacrificed and prayed, in many cases with the spirit and fortitude of martyrs. I cannot let these tens of thousands of people down, and I have no intention of doing so.

Ladies and Gentlemen, no matter what the future leadership of The John Birch Society may be, those of us who are members of it today will always be grateful to Robert Welch for remaining true to his "rendezvous with life," as he calls it, and for keeping his promises to us.

If leadership is the backbone of an organization, then membership is its muscle. What about our membership? Just how effective has it been? You know, quite often we hear people say, "I can be more effective on the outside. I can do more good if I don't become controversial." Ladies and Gentlemen, the only way to avoid controversy in these matters is to stay out of the contest. It reminds me of the football player who liked the game, but was afraid of getting his uniform dirty. The more effective we are against our



Sp
it
engag

enemies, the more they attempt to discredit us, and the more controversial we become. The fact that The John Birch Society is controversial is not a result of its mistakes, but of its *successes*. You want to be effective against Communism? Then you'd better be prepared to become controversial. If you're not controversial, then you're not hurting the enemy.

Of course, most of those who think they can be more effective on the outside are just kidding themselves. There are exceptions, naturally, but because they're denied the many advantages of organization and team effort, instead of being *more* effective, or even *as* effective, most of them end up doing practically nothing at all.

Still, it's a legitimate question. Could we have been more effective on the outside, those of us who are now members? What if everyone had taken that course. What then? Well, obviously, there would be no John Birch Society. Without members, there'd be no organization. There would have been tens of thousands of meetings never held, hundreds of speakers never heard, millions of books never printed and, hence, never read. There would have been scores of films never produced, bookstores never opened, radio programs never broadcast, study groups never formed, billboards never erected, petitions never circulated, handbills never printed, committees never started, and literally millions of people never informed. In fact, without The John Birch Society, I wonder how few people in the entire country today would really understand what's going on. I don't know about you, but you're looking at one person who would *not*. I came out of the university spouting all the proper collectivist cliches, and I'd been conditioned like everyone else to smirk with an air of amused superiority whenever someone expressed a concern over domestic Communism. It wasn't until I ran smack into The John Birch Society that I was exposed to the other side and began to re-evaluate my premises.

It's my conviction that there simply would be no substantial anti-Communist movement in America today if our members had been "more effective on the outside."

But just how effective have we been on the *inside?* How can you measure that? Let our enemies answer that question.

This booklet, entitled *The American Ultras,* was published by the American Socialist Party. As you can tell by the cover (displayed to audience), it's all about us. Here's what it says back on page 65: "What makes the Ultras such a challenge is that they are not simply the product of conditions and forces, but, rather, they are building a movement."[1]

Which is precisely the point. We are unlike anything they've ever faced before. Always in the past, they've been able to take the initiative with nothing but sporadic reaction from our side. Now, for the first time in history, they're facing a *movement* with goals of its own. They're having to defend, for a change, and they don't like it one bit.

The Communist Party, U.S.A. publishes a small newspaper in San Francisco, entitled *The People's World.* In this issue dated March 18, 1967 (displayed to audience), they ran a feature article entitled "A Close Look at the Birchers." Here is their appraisal:

> The John Birch Society is the largest and most sophisticated "anti-Communist" organization in the United States. The Right is a seething mass of over 4,000 organizations, bewildering in their titles, aims, and diversity. Of all these groups, only some 30 distinct organizations appear to be of national importance, and the prime one is The John Birch Society.

1) *The American Ultras; The Extreme Right and the Military-Industrial Complex,* by Irwin Swall, (New America, 1182 Broadway, New York, N.Y., 1962)



Sp
it
engag

Of course, we think it's a major accomplishment just to be in existence after the attacks that have been mounted against us these many years. And I think if you'd been standing at this end of the cannon, you'd feel rather proud of that, too. Back in 1961, when they lowered the big guns on The John Birch Society for the first time, they fully expected there'd be nothing left except a hole in the ground where we'd been standing. Within forty-eight hours, everyone from coast to coast was informed by our news media that a threat to our country had just been discovered. Far more dangerous than Communism, which was weak and mellowing, anyway, this group, hiding behind the innocuous name of The John Birch Society, was un-American, fascist, racist, anti-Semitic, secret, and a peril to our civil liberties. No one had ever withstood that kind of an attack before. But when the smoke cleared, lo and behold, we were still there—rather ragged-looking around the edges, to be sure, but we were still there. So they fired another salvo. And, again, we stood our ground. But this time visibly we had grown. They fired again, and we grew. Again, they fired, and still we grew. So, finally, they said, "Wait a minute. We're giving these people too much publicity. They thrive on our attacks." And then they ignored us for a long time, and we continued to grow. So they attacked again, and we grew. No matter what they do, we grow, because, frankly, ours is an idea whose hour has come, and there's *nothing* they can do to stop us.

In the face of everything our enemies have been able to throw against us, The John Birch Society has grown and prospered to the point where, today, it's the largest publisher of conservative and anti-Communist books in the world. It operates the largest and most active speakers bureau in the world. It constitutes the largest chain of exhibitors of Americanist films and film-strips in the world. In short, it's the largest and unquestionably the most effective anti-Communist organization in existence in the entire world. And in view of

the opposition thrown against us, Ladies and Gentlemen, I hope you'll forgive our pride in this accomplishment.

Of course it's not what we have done in the past that's so important. After all, we're a long way from winning this battle. While it's true we have grown and prospered, so has the organization of Communism, and they're moving rapidly toward their ultimate goal. So we cannot afford to sit back and bask in the glories of our past accomplishments. It's our potential for the future that really counts. It's our potential for the future that, not only gives us the most encouragement, but also frightens our enemies the most. For we now know—and so do they—that all we have to do is exactly what we have been doing, only with increased effort, and we *shall* succeed.

Why, then, do people join The John Birch Society? They do so for only one reason: because they can be more effective on the *inside*, more effective promoting the principles in which they believe, in accordance with a plan of action designed to overcome the opposition against them.

We are not discouraged that our numbers are small. The John Birch Society was never intended to be a mass movement. History has always been determined, not by the many, but by the dedicated few who provided leadership, by the few who knew what they wanted, knew how to obtain it, and who were willing to make the necessary risks and sacrifices. This is just as true in American history as it is in world history. When Paul Revere went racing down those cobblestone streets, shouting "The British are coming!", you know, most of those who heard his voice went right back to sleep. Only a few answered the call. Only a few stood at the bridge. Only a few at Lexington and Concord. Only a few signed the Declaration. Only a few crossed the Delaware. Only a few contributed the political and religious ideas that were hammered into our Constitution. And, Ladies and Gentlemen,



Sp
it
engag

only a *very* few are going to save this Constitutional Republic, if it is to be saved at all.

As I mentioned earlier, numbers are not nearly as important as dedication. If just a handful of Americans would give to the preservation of their own liberties the same dedication as their enemies devote to the destruction of those liberties, there'd be no contest. We'd win, hands down.

Do you have any idea what the average Communist gives to his cause? As a very minimum, every Communist must devote at least ten per cent, not only of his income, but, more important, ten per cent of his *time* to the Communist Party. That doesn't sound like much until you start to figure it out. Ten per cent of an average person's waking time is eleven hours per week. And don't forget, that's a minimum figure. Many of them devote more than that. But they all give at least eleven hours every week to the cause of Communism.

The question is this. How many hours did *you* give last week for the principles in which *you* believe? How many hours did you spend last month? The truth of the matter is, most Americans don't devote eleven hours to their country all year long. Every two years, some of them might manage to go into a polling booth and pull down a few levers or put X's into a few squares. And then, they're finished. Is it any wonder we have been losing?

The Communists are counting on taking this nation, as they have all others, with less than one-half of one per cent of the population. But the point is, it can work both ways. One half of one per cent of the population, organized and dedicated, is also more than enough to restore this nation to health and sanity once again. The question is not *can* it be done, but is even a minority of Americans willing to *do* it?

In closing, Ladies and Gentlemen, I'd like to make an appeal, if I could, to your emotions. So far, this has not been

what you'd call a motivational talk. I've dealt with political philosophy, theories of economics, organizational forms, and tactics. It's pretty hard to get excited over any of this unless we see it as part of a solution to a problem, a problem in which we are personally and emotionally involved. There's nothing wrong with this reaction though, if it's based on facts. And so, I appeal, not only to your emotion, but also to your reason, when I ask you these questions:

How many more American men must lose their lives in no-win wars before you join with us? Does it have to be your own son or your own husband?

How many riots and burning of cities must there be before you join with us? Must it be your own town, your own business, or your own home destroyed?

How many more campuses must be turned into Communist indoctrination centers?

How many more churches converted into leftist political clubs?

How many more government controls and regulations will it take?

How much more welfare to discourage production and encourage idleness?

How much more drugs and pornography?

How much more crime?

How many more taxes?

How much more inflation?

Look around you, my friends. Your world is crumbling. What more is it going to take?

If you have a better plan, then follow it. If you really are one of those rare individuals who can be more effective on



Sp
it
engag

your own without the advantages of organization, then *prove* it. Let's see your results. If you think you can form a better organization than ours, that you have the talent to build a nationwide leadership force and the time to train that force, and if you think you have the ability to attract over 100,000 members dedicated to your cause, and if you know for sure that you'll be able to withstand the attacks that'll be leveled against you, then do it. *Don't just talk about it. Do it!*

I hope you'll forgive my exasperation with people who criticize us for making this mistake here and that mistake there while they, themselves, do nothing.

The John Birch Society may not be perfect. Indeed, we make mistakes, and we are painfully aware of them all. But until the perfect man creates the perfect organization with none but perfect members in it, The John Birch Society is our *only* choice. It's not merely an idea on the drawing boards. It's not something we're *going* to do someday in the future if we ever have the time or can find the money. It's here, now. It has proven its ability over many years. And all it needs to fulfill its destiny—is *you*.

With your prayers and with your help, together, we shall bring about less government, more responsibility, and, with God's help, a better world.

Inquiries regarding membership in The John Birch Society should be made directly to the Society's main headquarters, 395 Concord Avenue, Belmont, Massachusetts 02178.

THIS IS THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY

QUANTITY PRICES

Per Copy	
$1.00	1 to 9 copies
80¢	10 to 99 copies
65¢	100 or more copies

California residents add 5% sales tax.

Order From

American Media

Box 1365, Thousand Oaks
California 91360

The text of this book was taken from a sixteen millimeter film by the same title. The film is 1 hour, 55 minutes long and comes packaged in three parts plus an empty take-up reel in the shipping case. The price is $274.00 (for California residents, the price, including a 5% sales tax, is 287.70). Purchase orders and inquiries should be directed to American Media.



MEET THE MIND EXPANDER!

It's no exaggeration to say that THE SPOKEN WORD LIBRARY is the most mind-expanding innovation of the Twentieth Century.

For thousands of years the *printed* word has been the most powerful communicator and the greatest storehouse of the world's accumulated wit and wisdom. Even with the arrival of radio and television, the printed book remained the undisputed champion communicator of complex ideas.

The development of the magnetic tape recorder began to change this situation, but it wasn't until the advent of the cassette, with its simplicity and low cost, that recordings could begin to challenge the previous supremacy of books. And it wasn't until American Media applied the sophisticated and creative production techniques of radio that the cassette recording really came into its own as a product worthy to be called a home reference library.

So now, in addition to those qualities of permanence and depth long associated with books, there is added the convenience of being able to pursue the world's greatest ideas and entertainment while actually doing something *else* — a factor of tremendous importance to busy people with limited time. Those intellectually wasted hours driving to or from work or doing chores around the house now can be converted into the equivalent of the same time spent with a good book.

THE SPOKEN WORD LIBRARY offers a wide range of pre-recorded programs in such diverse categories as citizenship, health, true-life adventure stories, the classics, life-lesson stories for children, and stories just for fun. A free listing will be sent upon request.

THE SPOKEN WORD LIBRARY

from AMERICAN MEDIA
Box 1365 Thousand Oaks
California 91360



American Media

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

G. Edward Griffin is the ideal host and guide for this tour. Having joined The John Birch Society in 1960, shortly after it began to organize, he has held virtually every position within the field staff at one time or another. He is one of the few



men in the country authorized as an official spokesman for the Society. Today Mr. Griffin is president of American Media, a publishing and audio-visual production firm in Southern California. He is also the creator and producer of THE SPOKEN WORD LIBRARY.

Mr. Griffin is the author of many books and films including *The Life and Words of Robert Welch* (1973), *The Capitalist Conspiracy; An Inside View of International Banking* (1971), *This Is The John Birch Society; An Invitation to Membership* (1970), *More Deadly Than War; The Communist Blueprint for Revolution in America* (1969), *The Grand Design; An Overview of U.S. Foreign Policy* (1968), *The Great Prison Break; The Supreme Court Leads the Way* (1968) and *The Fearful Master; A Second Look at the United Nations* (1964). Mr. Griffin is known nationally for his lectures and debates from an Americanist point of view.

A
LETTER
TO
KHRUSHCHEV

A great American patriot has said that historians of the future, looking back on this period of America's gradual surrender to Communism, will marvel most at the lack of resistance of those who had the most to lose.

To do our small part to prevent that tragedy, we are trying to reach, with this magazine, the intelligent, hard working, prosperous business executives, professional men, and other direct beneficiaries of our Americanist system. It is our objective to bring to this audience not more *knowledge*, but a better *understanding*, of current events—when viewed against the background of the methods and menace of the Communist conspiracy.

From the first issue of AMERICAN OPINION

A LETTER TO KHRUSHCHEV

March 3, 1958

Nikita S. Khrushchev
The Kremlin, Moscow, U.S.S.R.

Sir:

First, we apologize for using the worn-out technique of the "open letter". It is the only apology you will find anywhere in these pages.

We are publishing this message, instead of merely mailing it to you, however, for two reasons. (A) We hope it will be endorsed, by an appreciable number of anti-Communists in this country, as a crystallization of some of their own thoughts. (B) The chance of having it actually read and considered by yourself will be much increased by this procedure. We want it to come to your attention — and, frankly, we believe that it will.

Do Not Expect Diplomatic Language . . .

Second, our phrasing will be straightforward. Using words, not to convey thoughts, but to disguise them, was in Talleyrand's time only a formula. The practice has now become a major branch of our contemporary arts and sciences. So the communications which you receive through diplomatic channels, from officials of our government, would seldom assay one brass tack to the carload. It may be well worthwhile for you to read a letter from an American private citizen, who can tell you what he thinks without swaddling the substance irretrievably in hypocritical humbug.

As a part of that straightforwardness, we shall not go out of our way to be insulting, as you have frequently done in addressing us — making a grandstand play of the insult for its

propaganda value. Nor shall we, on the other hand, either make any pretense of hiding our dislike for you and your associates, nor sidestep the use of pungent idiom if it accurately expresses our point of view. A major reason for writing this letter is to speak, so far as we can, for that segment of the American population — which we believe still to be the preponderant majority — that is basically and bitterly hostile to your whole regime, and which feels betrayed by all of the expressions and manifestations of friendship towards you on the part of our present administration in Washington. Our government, following a proverbial principle of politicians, may well have hinted: "If you will desist from telling lies about us, we will refrain from telling the truth about you." But this writer does not subscribe to any such undertaking.

But Plain Truth, At First Hand . . .

Third, we are aware that you have plenty of agents in our midst, whose duties include the continuous despatch, back to the Kremlin, of detailed reports as to what the American people are thinking. But agents can be deceived, or deceiving. And anyway, you can save the cost of a lot of microfilm by simply reading this issue of AMERICAN OPINION. You will not even have to buy a copy. A gift subscription, to start with this number, has been entered for you by an enemy of yours. That's how we got the inspiration for this letter. Giving you some unvarnished truth might conceivably dispel a few dangerous ideas, which may be chasing each other around in your sometimes vodka-soaked upper story. Just for instance, you could be starting to believe some of your own propaganda. And that would be a bad mistake. For remember: If an erstwhile pal of yours, named Hitler, had paid less attention to his yes-men, and listened more attentively to some of his American *foes*, he might be dining on Wiener schnitzel in Berchtesgaden tonight.

Finally, this writer — along with many of his friends — does not believe that you are the "head of state" in Russia today at all. We think you are a "front" man, told what to say and

how to say it, when to clown and when to rant, by Malenkov —or whoever the real dictator may be—behind the scenes. But we are perfectly willing to go along with this imposture, and address our remarks to you as if you really were the boss. For we deduce that yours is one of the most important sets of ears, as well as tongues and sets of hands, at his disposal. So we hope you will listen, both for him and for yourself.

II

STRANGE TO SAY, most of what we have to tell you is going to please you very much. For example, we know that you are winning the Cold War by leaps and bounds. We are familiar with the three-step program laid out by Lenin for the Communist conquest of the world: First, eastern Europe, then the masses of Asia, and last the final bastion of opposition, the United States of America. We can see that you have already completed the first step entire, three-fourths of the second step, and — through the power of your strategically placed agents — at least one-fourth of the last step. In fact, we measured your tremendous geographical progress, in some detail, in an article entitled *Look At The Score*, in the November, 1957 issue of this magazine. (Back copies, each, fifty cents American or one thousand kopecks.) We are duly impressed and honestly frightened by that score.

We Know About Your Agents In Our Government . . .

We also acknowledge the remarkable degree of your influence in, or control over, a huge number of the governments of the world, even those outside of the Iron Curtain — and most assuredly including our own. We think that when Stalin implied to the Czech diplomat, Arnhost Heidrich, in 1947, that he, Stalin, was even then in practical control of the American government (see the *Saturday Evening Post*, July 14, 1947), he was not exaggerating. We think that this control of the Kremlin over the policies and actions of our government has steadily increased and tightened during the ten years since.

We are sure that a very high percentage of the individuals in our government are entirely loyal and patriotic public servants. Nevertheless this whole organization has been insidiously but steadily led down the road the Kremlin wanted it to follow, by a clever and powerful minority of manipulators—consisting of actual Communist agents, Communist sympathizers, and their socialist allies and dupes. Loyal individuals, in positions of any authority at all, who were not gulled as to the direction the whole body was traveling, had to be willing to close their eyes to that direction instead of opposing the movement. Otherwise they soon found themselves transferred to less important positions, or on the outside altogether. And we think that the number, prestige, power, and brazenness of your agents within our government today, at all levels, is by far the greatest it has ever been. Many of our readers have heard us say this before, but not in a letter to you, so we hope they will forgive the repetition.

And What They Have Accomplished . . .

We recognize the many disastrous steps our government, or the political masters of our destinies, have taken during the last decade, as a result of this control from the Kremlin, to help International Communism. Regardless of the plausible excuses, oblique approaches, and indirect wire-pulling through which that control was exercised, many of the results have been catastrophic for our best friends throughout the world as well as for ourselves. Among the most important of these pro-Communist actions, or Communist-aiding activities, during the past twelve years — even though some did not seem so at the time to many who participated in them — are the following:

Abroad . . .

(1) The betrayal of our great ally, Mihailovich, and turning Yugoslavia over to Stalin's hatchet man, Tito — as fully documented in David Martin's *Ally Betrayed*.

(2) The betrayal of Poland by the Acheson-dominated State Department, and turning that country over to Stalin's Lublin Gang — as accurately described by our own ambassador

right on the spot, Arthur Bliss Lane, in his book *I Saw Poland Betrayed*.

(3) The betrayal of Chiang Kai-shek and turning the mainland of China over to your murderous subordinate, Mao Tse-tung, by the Dean Acheson-Alger Hiss-George Marshall axis in our State Department — as fully disclosed in George Creel's *Russia's Race For Asia* and a dozen other books.

(4) The dismissal of General MacArthur, in order to keep him from winning the Korean War.

Or At Home . . .

(5) The snatching of the Republican nomination from Taft in 1952 by purchase, theft, secret deals, and other tactics more foul than had ever before appeared in American politics. For Taft, as you well knew, would have cleaned out your agents by the thousands, and had to be defeated at any cost.

(6) The negotiations at Panmunjom, where all of the negotiators on the Communist side, all of the "neutralists" like Nehru, and entirely too many of the negotiators on our side, were all working for the Kremlin.

(7) The defeat of the Bricker Amendment, which would have constituted a roadblock across the flow of American sovereignty and power of decision into the United Nations, ILO, NATO, and other international organizations.

(8) The Supreme Court decision of May 17, 1954, with the ultimate purpose (on your part, anyway) of fomenting civil war in this country.

(9) The censure by the United States Senate of Joe McCarthy — of which most of the senators who were pressured and bamboozled into so asinine a slap at themselves are now (when it is much too late) thoroughly ashamed.

(10) Our huge (and still continuing) part in the surrender of French Indochina to the Communists.

And Also How . . .

(11) The constant catering of our government to Com-

munist collaborators, "neutralists", and viceroys like Gronchi of Italy, Nehru of India, and Soekarno of Indonesia — the last of whom, a Communist stooge all of his adult life, and who only a few years before had led a mob that burned an American president in effigy as an "imperialist", in the streets of Batavia, was in 1955 accorded the longest and most fulsome "state" visit in our nation's history. (As if you didn't know, or how it was arranged.)

(12) The "Summit Conference" in Geneva in 1955, which could have and did have no possible result except the strengthening of the Kremlin's grip inside the Iron Curtain and the aggrandizement of its prestige abroad.

(13) The doublecrossing, by agencies of our government, of the East German uprising in 1953 and of the Hungarian uprising in 1956.

(14) The acceptance by our National Security Council of the official position that we want the satellite nations to remain as military allies of Soviet Russia.

(15) The whole gigantic hoax called NATO, inaugurated by Dean Acheson, started on its way by the Communist-dominated Truman administration, and built to its present incredible mountain of extravagant futility by the influence of your agents in our government and other governments of the West.

(16) The whole Sputnik episode, with all of its ramifications, of which we shall have more to say anon.

We Do Not Congratulate You, But . . .

You are doing all right, Comrade Khrushchev; very much all right from your point of view. And we are well aware that the speed of your progress, the arrogant openness of the help given you by our government, and the vicious crushing of your opposition everywhere (including inside America), have all greatly increased since 1953. We are not happy about it, but we are realistic enough to face the facts.

We know that you know all of these things, Comrade Khrushchev, but a third step is important. We want you to

know that we know that you know. We have recounted some of the farreaching maneuvers which have herded us to this precipice because we wanted to convince you that the Kremlin's hidden hand in those maneuvers was not as hidden as you might have hoped. By the time we come to write the final and most important paragraphs of this letter, we must have made clear: (1) That we really do know how far you have already gone towards making the United States just another batch of three or four Soviet Republics; and (2) that we understand the methods and the measures by which you have achieved such staggering results. In that vein, and for that purpose, let's turn from the past to what is happening right now, and to what you thoroughly expect to happen in the proximate future.

III

IN THE FIRST PLACE, we are sure that your former agent, Igor Gouzenko, was absolutely right when he said that your success in launching the earth satellite, Sputnik, was due to two factors: (1) The theft of the know-how from various agencies of our Defense Department; and (2) the deliberate holding back of such a launching by ourselves, through the influence of treason at work in our government. The treasonous moves were, as Gouzenko says, disguised under seemingly logical excuses. But the net result, and the intended result, was to let you have the glory, the propaganda value, and all of the less obvious advantages, of this first conquest of outer space.

Even the obtainable evidence to support this assertion is plentiful, and has been for a long time. In a speech by Senator McCarthy as far back as October, 1955 — on a platform which this writer shared with him as the only other speaker — the Senator pointed out that our own progress in the field of missile and rocket production was being willfully slowed down by traitorous forces inside our government. And he prophesied exactly what has now happened, as bound to happen unless the treason was rooted out.

You Floated Your Sputnik . . .

We are not overlooking the importance of your kidnapped German scientists, Comrade Khrushchev, for many of them were and are rocket specialists. With their knowledge and experience, plus the information stolen from us — both directly and through the British — plus a "crash program" at any cost, you were able to put a ball high enough above the earth's atmosphere to have it settle into a tentative and temporary orbit. You even followed that up with a second ball, supposedly much larger — but concerning which all specifications and reports have been much less authentically confirmed. And we are convinced that you also can justly claim credit for the way we have been so pantingly playing second fiddle, and shouting "Look, me too," ever since.

But we are further convinced, Comrade Khrushchev, largely by your own claims to having such a plethora of rockets and missiles ready to loose on our helpless heads, that you do not have any such thing. For we know from long observation how your mind and your strategy work. If you really did have the weapons and the superiority in advanced technology, to accomplish our destruction or to be sure of winning any war that got started, you would be telling us just the opposite until you were ready to start using the weapons.

As You Got The Bomb . . .

We believe that there is a close parallel here with your former actions and pretenses in connection with nuclear weapons. We do not doubt either the knowledge, or the accuracy of the conclusion, of the former chief of security training of our whole governmental enterprise in the field of atomic energy. He says that up until 1953, at least, in all probability you had never manufactured even one atomic bomb; that those which you had been "test-exploding" for show-off purposes you had assembled out of parts which your agents had easily stolen, and simply walked away with, from our plants. And we think that, similarly, all of your claims to solid scientific

accomplishment, based on the Sputnik stunt, are one-third exaggeration and two-thirds sheer poppycock.

But Your Reputation Is Tough On Your Pretenses . . .

From the past actions of yourself and your associates, it seems likely that your beeping moonlet was a glittering sample, contrived at an all-out cost for the display window, with nothing in stock behind it but an exhausted shop. Otherwise, why would you go to such extreme lengths, through every pipe in your propaganda organ, to convince us of the opposite. Many of us have read enough Russian history, Comrade Khrushchev, to remember Potemkin's "prosperous" villages on the Dnieper. The houses were only false fronts, without walls or floors behind them, which served the single purpose of making a good show for Catherine and her courtiers as the royal barges floated by. With some cardboard painted to look like tile, and a traveling troupe of actors dressed like peasants, Potemkin gave Catherine a deluded glimpse of a whole happy empire in the Crimea. With one missile weighing — so it is claimed — 165 pounds, and another one much more vaguely presented for our imaginations to endow with some frightening statistics, you would have us visualize behind them a flotilla of space ships ready to head for Mars. And we are to take for granted that, just as a by-product of building your Sputniks, or vice versa, you have or will soon have a battery of intercontinental missiles ready to pinpoint Times Square, the Boston State House, and Capitol Hill as targets from five thousand miles away. Pfui! We don't claim your grapes are sour, Comrade Khrushchev. Knowing what an inveterate liar you are, we don't believe they even exist.

Infantry You Have . . .

Don't get us wrong. We know that you have a land army massive enough and brutal enough to overrun all of Europe at will — mowing down in the process tens of thousands of our soldiers who have been scattered everywhere in helpless small

detachments to make that particular result easier for you. We know that the strongest part of your navy is your fleet of submarines, because submarines were a specialty of the German scientists whom you enslaved in 1945 — with the utterly disgraceful assent of representatives of our government. One reason that we really believe in those submarines is that the information comes from authoritative sources *outside* of *your* government or *ours*. Another is that we haven't heard you boasting about them. We are also painfully aware that you do not have to transport your nuclear pilferage to Russia; that it is possible for your agents to steal the parts of, assemble, and hide right here in our cities, enough atomic bombs to do tremendous damage in a surprise attack at any time you felt safe enough from retaliation to undertake one. But the key to all of the problems thus posed for us is really our internal security against treason, not your military strength or ours — and that is the significant point of this discussion to which we are coming in due course.

But Production You Haven't . . .

Also, please do not get us wrong about another matter. We do not claim that Russians are constitutionally incapable of designing a submarine or a rocket. What we doubt so confidently is that you have either the vast technological competence or productive capacity, below the experimental level, to turn out all of those missiles and nuclear bombs you are threatening to start tossing around. The most dependable conclusions, arrived at by the most objective scholars from combining all of the evidence available, is that your equipment, your degree of mechanization, and your production per man-hour, even in your most industrialized centers at their best, are about equal to what ours were in 1920; and that your total industrial production in proportion to your total population is today at the level of ours in 1900!

Your real pride, Comrade Khrushchev, as distinguished from your deceptive boastings to frighten a gullible public, is

in the six thousand Communist schools and colleges throughout the world, teaching *political* warfare, agitation, and subversion. We know that too large a percentage of the Communist youth, with the best brains and the most ambition, are taking this road to personal advancement, for the total inventive genius and technological capacity of your whole brainwashed gang to exceed the level which this country passed right after World War I. As late as 1944, under the most pressing need imaginable, your thousands of brilliant young technologists didn't have "scientific" sense enough to put together the complete manufacturing plants which we shipped them, or to keep such plants running even after we assembled and started them off in good order. Why should we think that in a dozen years your whole engineering and technical-labor population has suddenly moved from the abacus to the electronic-computer stage of dealing with matters mathematical and materials scientific?

For Subversion Is Your Real Weapon . . .

We think you are making headway, without question. And that in due course, if we all live that long, the growing and spreading skill of your workers in technical production processes will move you up from the 1920 notch to some reasonably contemporary level, and one very dangerous for ourselves. But up to now, Comrade Khrushchev, you have been running too many schools and agencies of subversion, because that is the area in which you were winning all of your important victories —and where you are still looking for your decisive victories today. Most of the successful sycophants and brilliant schemers in your system have learned the professional uses of animal cunning and the forensic employment of dialectic cleverness; not how to split an atom — nor how to improve a lathe. In the proper setting of a loaded debating society on the East River, they can lift the wings of logic. But when it comes to lifting the wings of lead, they still have to steal the blueprints from the West, and ape the motions of the West in trying to build and run the machines those blueprints forecast.

And Your Bluffs Are Superb . . .

If you really have all of this scientific superiority you are beating your breast about, Comrade Khrushchev, why is the basic textbook on nuclear physics, which is in use everywhere in the Soviet Union, one that was written in, and simply taken from, the United States? Why did you claim that your ten-billion electron-volt atom smasher had reached full power last spring, when it is in this case a known fact that it produced only *one-millionth* as many protons as needed to use it *for research?* And why, pray tell, when you needed in October, 1957, to release a picture of your Sputnik to the world for propaganda purposes, did it turn out to be an *exact* reproduction of the photograph of a satellite model on Page 129 of the January, 1956 issue of our magazine, *Popular Science*. Pfui again, Comrade Khrushchev. *The Wall Street Journal*, from which we got a part of the information above, calls you a *truth-stretcher* with regard to your scientific accomplishments. We would offer that, in any contest, as the prize understatement of at least a thousand years.

IV

HOWEVER, you did get Sputnik I, and even something you could call Sputnik II, up in the sky. And great was the propaganda value thereof. The immediate acclaim, fanned by your agents everywhere, was so great that most people assumed the direct visible results of this *tour de force* to be the most important results. These included: (1) The sheer glory of scientific achievement, and the mighty boost to Russian prestige all over the world which accompanied this glory; (2) the vague fear of what more deadlly "machines of the future" you might unloose, on the part of the man in the street everywhere, as expressed by one of them who said "it sorta gives you the shivers to think of that thing circling around overhead"; and (3) the blackmail value in diplomatic circles of your superiority in advanced weapons, of which this stunt was supposed to be the proof. Your plans to use the psychological advantages

thus given you, to bring about a "neutralization" of all of Germany, were outlined by one of our Associate Editors, Mr. Schlamm, in the February issue of this magazine.

This harvest alone would constitute a very good return on your investment. But we think you have some larger and longer schemes afoot, concerned primarily with ourselves, for which the launching of Sputnik was the starting gun. And you do not expect Americans, even a majority of those most active in promoting these schemes for you, to suspect that they are being cleverly inspired and steered into the final destruction of their own republic by your smooth secret agents and your plausible propaganda. For these same "naive Americans" are not yet even aware of how completely our domestic plunge into the swampy edges of the socialist quagmire, over the past twenty-five years, has come about, simply because the Kremlin, and the Kremlin's agents in this country, "planned it that way".

The Real Sputnik Was Launched In 1933 . . .

To change the metaphor, Comrade Khrushchev, the conspiratorial mechanism by which you are converting the United States into a communist country — to make it infinitely easier for you then to convert it into Communist satrapies ruled from Moscow — can be quite properly compared with a three-stage rocket. The first stage was fired in 1933, starting us with a "whoosh" on our way. Before the trajectory from that propulsion had leveled off we had already gone through: (1) the run on our banks and their resultant closing, in creating which hysteria your hands played the decisive unseen part, and which really supplied the launching stage for the whole rocket; (2) the establishment of the NRA, and the NLRB, and the boondoggling PWA, and the AAA, and all of the other alphabetical monstrosities of the New Deal — a great many of the leaders in which agencies have since been identified as active Communist agents or strong Communist sympathizers; (3) our joining the International Labor Organization, and the flooding into Washington from Montreal and Geneva of the agents of this

strategy board of international socialism; (4) the placing over the heads of our formerly self-reliant people of the government umbrella of "social security" — largely through the influence and machinations of your ILO pals; (5) the Wagner Act, and a complete change in the direction, morals, and character of the American labor movement; (6) the introduction of class hatred into our country, which previously had hardly even been conscious of class lines; (7) a tremendous increase in the size, expensiveness, power, and reach of our federal bureaucracy; (8) an increasing subservience of both the legislative and judiciary branches of our government to the executive branch; (9) the gradual acceptance by the American people of the first significant use of the progressive principle of taxation; and (10) hundreds of other measures, large and small, designed by your Marxian predecessors to make the initial journey of any people into the boundaries of socialism appealing, deceptive — and irrevocable.

Was Refueled By The War . . .

The second stage of this rocket you managed, largely by conspiratorial diplomacy and aggressively lying propaganda in many countries, to get fired on December 7, 1941. And this second stage had the indescribably powerful propulsion given it by a world-wide war. Its trajectory had only now started to level off, after carrying us so much further into the socialist realm that we do not even need to recount here the milestones and markers which we have rushed past in mad flight. We do not believe any sensible man, whether he desires socialism or hates it, could deny that we are twice as far along, in the direction you have wanted us to go, as we were in 1941.

And Now Zooms Anew . . .

Then, in October, 1957, your Sputnik set off the third stage of this far more important, though purely metaphorical, rocket. And once again, with a great "whoosh", we are on our way. The level of socialism to which you expect this rocket to

carry us is simply astounding. We'll list, soon, many of the specific goals your agents have in mind, which will constitute and delineate that level. First we need to congratulate you, once more, on your cleverness.

For the propulsion and the "whoosh", of this third-stage projectile of your psychological rocket, have not been provided altogether by your new kind of physical satellite. You and your fellow conspirators never do things by half, or leave any stone unturned which might conceivably make the success of your designs more certain. So, with the most beautiful timing imaginable, reports of the Gaither Committee, and of the Study Group of the Rockefeller Brothers Fund, and of assorted other committees and "study groups", have been following Sputnik and then each other with the precision of the hammer blows of a fancy clock striking the hour. And all of them have been driving into the American consciousness, as did Sputnik, the exact line of thought which you want lodged there at the present time. Like the confused general in the satirical epigram, the American nation is supposed to wake suddenly to a danger it does not understand, jump on its horse, and ride off in all directions at once. And under the present infiltrated leadership, it undoubtedly will.

With Boosters . . .

We do not claim to know all of the details as to how you have accomplished this feat. But with more room to spare, Comrade Khrushchev, we believe we could play back for you a recognizable résumé of the most significant tactical steps. Suffice it to say here that the Gaither Committee seems to have been composed of the usual quota of innocents, opportunists, and some who are not so innocent at all. Among the "innocents" are men as devotedly patriotic as any in America, who are also among our country's most able business men. But their "innocence", once they get outside of their own bailiwick, into the maze of politics and government, is ineffable. For the quickest illustration we can think of, these are the kind of men who

insisted in 1952 — and some of them even in 1956 — that Eisenhower was a conservative Republican. In view of the record, even in 1952 entirely clear and readily available, that by his ideological convictions, his actions, and his associations, Eisenhower belonged in the left-wing fringes of the Democratic Party, it would have been too much to expect of such men a realistic skepticism about any plausible-looking "facts" you arranged to have set before them.

Just how you managed, Comrade Khrushchev, even with all of your agents and dupes in our midst, to give the "facts" you wanted these men to get excited about all of the beguiling appearance of official "inside" information, and how many agents — if any — you had right inside the Committee itself to help to steer the reaction to these "facts" in accordance with your wishes — is not important. It is the results that count.

And Superchargers . . .

As for the report of the Rockefeller Brothers Fund Study Group, the question as to how these men arrived at their conclusions does not even arise. For this report was nothing more nor less than a condensed rehash of a book already written by its chairman, Henry A. Kissinger. The book was swallowed from foreword to appendix without visible hesitation by the "study group", and presented anew to the public with the formality of a "report", and with the window dressing of "big names" to give it more attention. And since Professor Kissinger is a distinguished member of the Harvard Faculty, there are certainly enough of your influences around him to push him pretty hard in the directions you desire.

At any rate, the tenor of both reports is exactly what you wanted, to reinforce the psychological impact of Sputnik. And we learned long ago not to be blinded by studying the details of your pyrotechnic displays at too close hand. It is much more instructive, and gives a much more accurate understanding of what goes on, to stand off far enough to look at the pattern formed by these panoramic fireworks in their unified effect.

In the present instance, as in many others, it is the superb synchronization that — next to the results themselves — most surely reveals your clever planning behind the separate displays which produce their composite magic.

All Coming In On Cue . . .

The Gaither Committee, the Rockefeller Brothers Fund Study Group, and other esoteric clusters now spouting the same extreme alarm — even to the hint that it might be wise to arm ourselves for a preventive war — have been gathering their "inside dope" for very varied periods. But at just the right time after your Sputnik was set up in the propaganda business, and at just the right time before our Congress got down to its job at this session, out came all of these reports to send shivers down our spine. It was all simply *too* pat, Comrade Khrushchev. Until your mathematical wizards (if any) succeed in amending the laws of probability, and in greatly lengthening the long arm of coincidence, we simply cannot buy such brilliant deceptive concatenations, and their extremely important results, under the label of happenstance.

For added to these more definitive assaults on whatever clearheadedness we might still possess, there has mushroomed a great amorphous storm of similar propaganda. The way your whole world-wide machine is now clicking like clockwork, to bring every needed instrumentality and propaganda tool into play with just the right line at precisely the right time, is one of the most brilliant performances in your long experience with organized deception. And the objective of every stunt, every boast, every report, every line, and every voice is exactly the same: To frighten both us and our representatives into giving the American left-wing everything even Karl Marx would ask for — all of it in the name of defense against Communist military might. The third stage of the rocket has been fired. From your point of view, it must not fail to carry the United States all of the remaining way to socialism, finally so recognized and proclaimed; and every ounce of available

strength of the Communist conspiracy must be marshalled—had to be marshalled — at the exact time and place to give it all necessary propulsion.

V

NOW THAT OUR rocket figure-of-speech has, we hope, served its purpose of relating our forthcoming leftward movement to similar glacial slides which began in 1933 and 1941—and in calling attention to your planning and engineering behind all three — let's abandon it. For in discussing specifically what the Kremlin expects to accomplish through all of its currently concerted ballyhoo, we need to talk in plainer language.

Our first need is to point out that it *is* ballyhoo, not substance. At least ninety-five percent of all of America's sudden fear of being destroyed or fatally injured by Russian weapons of war is due to just the same old Communist bluff and bluster, given a new injection of sound and fury. In the foreseeable future, Comrade Khrushchev, you are *not* going to try to impose your tyranny on us, or on what would be left of us after an all-out war, by launching any such war. For not only, in our opinion and as already mentioned, do you lack the productive base to sustain a world-wide war now — even in comparison with an enemy greatly weakened by whatever destruction you could accomplish through surprise — but there are three other controlling considerations.

You Also Have An "Enemy Within" . . .

The first of these is that the all-out world-wide war, to which any direct attack on the United States by the Soviet Union would certainly lead, would be the signal for a world-wide uprising of your enslaved subjects. For the desperately subdued and separately powerless people in China, in Poland, in East Germany, in every satellite and some "neutralist" dependencies, even in Russia itself, would know that the time to fight for freedom was now or never. And your Communist core, ranging from perhaps one percent of the total population

in China to five percent of that of Russia itself, simply would not be able, even with its brutal police-state mechanics for holding the masses in control, to withstand any *simultaneous* uprising of all of your slaves and enemies — even with your tanks against their sticks and stones. Little wars, piecemeal conquests, "police actions", insurrections of natives against their "colonial" rulers, even isolated rebellions against yourself within your own domains; these disturbances you can afford to foment, and guide, and support or suppress as the case may be, to have them best serve your ends. They are the sharp edge on the sword of your strategy. But the sword is not massive enough, and would not stay sharp long enough against such blunting resistance, to cover the planet with unfalteringly effective sweeps.

Simpler Plans . . .

Second, you are looking forward to achieving your military formalization of your take-over of America, when the time does come, by having your side win the domestic *civil* wars which you will have instigated for that purpose — exactly as you have done in every other country where there was any real strength of opposition. And neither your fomenting of civil strife in America, nor even your hidden grasp of the reins of authority and communication, have yet gone far enough to make the stage ready for that performance.

And the third consideration is that you are winning the whole world now — and moving forward towards a final showdown *in*, not *with*, the United States — too rapidly and too surely, to be foolish enough to gamble your steadily materializing victory on an all-out test of military strength. We think you will keep right on working for that total victory by basically the same means that have been so successful for you in the past. And deception is the essence of your method.

And Surer Ways To Win . . .

For many years we Americans have been taken steadily

down the road to Communism by steps supposedly designed, and presented to us, as ways of *fighting* Communism. Now, although the danger remains almost entirely *internal,* from Communist influences right in our midst and treason right in our government, the American people are being persuaded that our danger is from the *outside,* is from Russian military superiority. *Now* there is to be no limit to the plausible idiocy of the further steps to be taken under the excuse of matching this military strength, of preparing to defend ourselves from this threat of outside force. Our new Secretary of Defense has revealed the key to the overall program by announcing that "we may have to change our way of life." And you and your fellow Communists believe that you can stampede us into the biggest jump ever towards, and perhaps the final jump right into, socialism, communism, and then the Communist camp. Here are some of your obvious aims for the United States, to be achieved, you hope, through the momentum of the attitude induced by Sputnik and all of its auxiliary propaganda:

Specifically (For Us) . . .

(1) Greatly expanded government spending, for missiles, for so-called defense generally, for foreign aid, for every conceivable means of getting rid of ever larger sums of American money — as wastefully as possible.

(2) Higher taxes, and still higher taxes, and then much higher taxes.

(3) An increasingly unbalanced budget, despite the higher taxes.

(4) Increasing and ever more rapid inflation of our currency, leading in a parabolic curve to its ultimate worthlessness and complete repudiation.

(5) Government control of prices, wages, and materials, supposedly to combat inflation.

(6) Greatly expanded and intensified socialistic controls over every operation of our economy and every activity of our daily lives. This is to be accompanied, naturally and automatic-

ally, by a correspondingly huge increase in the size of our bureaucracy, and in both the cost and extensiveness of our domestic government.

(7) Far more centralization of power in Washington, especially in the Executive Branch of our government, and the gradual but practical elimination of our state lines.

(8) The steady advance of federal aid to, and control over, our educational system, leading to complete federalization of our public education.

(9) A constant pounding into the American mind of the horror of "modern warfare", and of the beauties and the absolute necessity of "peace" — peace, of course, always on Communist terms.

(10) And the consequent willingness of the American people to allow the steps of appeasement by our government which amount to a piecemeal surrender of the rest of the free world and of the United States itself to the Kremlin.

There is what Sputnik and all of its side decorations are really about. Those are the long-range results that we have to fear. If you and your fellow Communist conspirators can succeed in making us domestically a communist nation, it will not be too difficult a final move for you to pull us right into the world-wide Communist organization, ruled by Moscow. And unless we can have enough of a rebellion, in our own country, against the appeasement policies of our government *outside* and its communizing policies *inside* America, there isn't any doubt about your carrying out every one of the projected steps to your final goal, and reaching that goal itself.

VI

Of Course, having Sputnik and Gaither and Kissinger running around, unconscious, in the orbits you have established for them, did not itself bring to pass any of the objectives outlined above. It merely provided the mental climate and the political opportunity for your agents and their sympathizers and dupes to initiate and carry through the practical measures

leading to those objectives. Some few of these undertakings of your agents can be catalogued, much too briefly, as follows.

The Mechanics Of The Movement . . .

(1) Continue to keep us alarmed over the danger of actual war.

(2) Increase the impression that the Communist Party in the United States is rapidly declining in strength and numbers — while the number and power of your *secret* agents is growing by leaps and bounds.

(3) Carry through "Operation Abolition", to wipe out the Congressional investigating committees and the FBI, or to render them helplessly ineffectual in exposing your agents and activities.

(4) Make Communism and Communists ever more respectable, and sedition itself merely a difference of opinion.

(5) Liquidate or smother all voices which would *tell the truth about your conspiracy,* and amplify those which sing the tunes you call.

(6) Have some of your most important secret agents in the United States attack Soviet Russia, and each other, at times and in ways to serve your careful plans. Confuse the people of this country concerning their leadership, and then double that confusion.

(7) Have conspicuous characters, who command public attention, skillfully delineate and pompously confess to so many shades of belief, from lightest pink to darkest red, all smoothly flowing into each other, that nobody will be courageous enough or clearheaded enough to draw a line and say: "On this side is merely 'liberalism', but on this side is treason."

(8) Use the phony "civil rights" slogan to stir up bitterness and civil disorder, leading gradually to police-state rule by federal troops and armed resistance to that rule.

(9) Break down our immigration barriers further, and smuggle more aliens in through what barriers do exist. (Mr. Richard Arens, our best informed authority on the subject,

states bluntly that there are now over three million aliens *illegally* in this country, a huge number of them under the control of your front, the *American Committee for Protection of Foreign Born.*)

With Plenty Of Oil . . .

(10) Promote more "cultural exchanges" between ourselves and Soviet Russia. This will provide more spies nosing openly into everything we do, while our visitors to Russia will be allowed to see only what you want them to see. It will further build up the impression that Communists are just like everybody else, only more so.

(11) Gather together ever new fronts of gullible innocents, controlled by a few of your secret agents, to rant publicly about everything from "peace" to repeal of the McCarran Act.

(12) Support vigorously, by every trick in the Communist political repertory, all legislation leading towards your major objectives.

(13) Flood the country with new "small" magazines of every description, each of them catering to the specialized area of interest of some segment of the American people, with no apparent room or reason for concern with the Communist issue — and each of them subtly promoting the Communist line as its real reason for existence.

Transmission Belts . . .

(14) Organize an unending number of phony committees, for "aid", or "information", or "liberation" of the people behind the Iron Curtain, so as to drain off money and energy of the American people that might otherwise go into honest anti-Communist causes.

(15) Push your own men ever further and higher in our union labor organizations, and extend your power steadily over our whole labor movement. Not only does this give you a tremendous potential for sabotage in our economy whenever needed, but a "labor government" would be a most convenient first formal step in taking us over.

(16) See that our supposedly expanded, and certainly more expensive, missile program is kept in exactly those same hands which have so messed it up and delayed it — and allowed it to be sabotaged — before. You will need to keep pointing to our "lagging inferiority" in the most modern weapons, for many purposes.

(17) Promote ever more meetings, and ostentatious gestures of friendship, between members of your government and of ours. It increases despair and decreases resistance of anti-Communists on both sides of the Curtain.

(18) Get your known sympathizers elected ever more openly and brazenly to high positions in our great religious and educational organizations. It discourages opposition within those organizations, as being hopeless and futile; and enables your agents to speak your lines with the *ostensible* support of millions behind them.

(19) Feed the prestige and power of the United Nations in every way possible. It's your baby — and has been ever since Alger Hiss served as midwife for its birth.

(20) Spread a belief in the inevitability and desirability of our recognition of Red China, and of its admission to the United Nations.

(21) Promote greater United States participation in ILO, WHO, and all similar international organizations. They dilute our sovereignty, our substance, and our anti-Communist determination.

And Wrenches . . .

(22) Stir up distrust and hatred between Jews and Gentiles, Catholics and Protestants, Negroes and Whites, and all other possible offsetting factions of our population, by every possible lie, smear, and distortion. Your first maxim for the conquest of any people is to divide them.

(23) Maintain and increase your working control over both of our major political parties. You do not have to fear

that any firm and aggressive anti-Communist will be elected president, so long as you can keep one from being nominated.

(24) Expand the mental health racket just as rapidly as you can. Railroading your outspoken enemies to hospitals, as being "mentally sick", will become very useful, long before you reach the police-state ability to knock on a door at two o'clock in the morning, and dispose of an enemy in such way that he is never heard from again.

(25) Smear your effective enemies by every form of character assassination known. *After this has been accomplished*, or where it is insufficient, arrange "natural deaths", fatal "accidents", plausible "suicides", and — as a last resort, outright obvious murders — wherever getting rid of such an enemy seems worth the storm that may be raised. The only matter to be weighed in any case is the damage being done to your cause by the individual, against the extent to which your hand might be disclosed or surmised in his murder, and against the reaction of the public to the event.

This list, far from being exhaustive, is only a beginning. We could identify at least a hundred specific similar efforts to which your agents in this country — open and secret, foreign and native — are assigned right now. But this is enough to serve our purpose — to let you know that we know what you are about. Most of these enterprises are exactly the same methods you have used in taking over other countries. Some are adjustments or extensions of your strategy, to cover the circumstances involved in annihilating the one greatest and final bastion of your opposition.

VII

We know, Comrade Khrushchev, that you and your associates take for granted that you will win — that it is only a matter of time. We know that most of the best-informed people on "our side" think the same thing. Most of my friends who have been in this fight the longest, and know the most about it, do not give us any chance whatever for survival. Some

say we have one chance in a hundred, some one chance in fifty or thirty or twenty, as the case may be. Carl Byoir, who knew more about propaganda and its uses than any other American, stated before his death that we had "not more than" one chance in ten; and that is the most favorable probability I would be able to quote from anybody whose experience, judgment, and honesty in this field I respect.

Your Powerful Agents . . .

We know, Comrade Khrushchev, how deep, how far, and *how high* your infiltration has gone. Just a month ago a committee of the Massachusetts legislature officially cited thirty-seven more active Communists in this area, on top of twice that number named by it a few months before that. But these *identifiable* Communists are almost negligible in the total picture. What is much more important is that, within not too many miles from where we are writing these lines, there is a president of one institution of higher learning (not Harvard, incidentally), the president of one sizable bank, the dean of one law school, the editor of one newspaper, and the judge of one court, whom we believe to be Communists; not merely ideological sympathizers with a communism which they foolishly mistake for humanitarianism, but active agents of an international conspiracy, subtly working for Communist conquest of the world. And our opinion, in every one of these cases, is shared by other students of your conspiracy who judge these men by the *ultimate results* of what they do — which *always* help the Communists — rather than by the excuses they give for doing it. Yet every one of these men is a highly respected and — by the general public — utterly unsuspected member of the community.

Your Instrumentalities Of Thought Control . . .

We know, Comrade Khrushchev, how unaware the American people are of the unseen tentacles of your conspiracy, now exerting their hidden pressures everywhere. To maintain this

unawareness you have employed, on a tremendously larger scale, the exact technique of opinion molding which Stalin used so successfully in Russia, from 1924 to 1929. You have projected this technique into a system of influence and control over the media of mass communication in America that is probably the most gigantic accomplishment of its kind in human history. You have created a blanket of twisted information, misleading slants, subtle propaganda, and brazen falsehoods, between the American people and any clear view of your activities. We admit that you have made every effort to pierce this blanket seem almost hopeless — and every light which is somehow thrust into the darkness seem pitiful in its candlepower. Not only do the American people as a whole have no idea of what is happening. Your propaganda machine has induced into them an unwillingness to believe the facts, no matter how incontrovertibly presented — or even to listen to the facts at all, so as to have any chance to believe.

Your Ideological Subterfuge . . .

We know, Comrade Khrushchev, that too many influential Americans, in all good conscience, are blaming the visible results of your vast conspiratorial operations on "a worldwide spontaneous movement to the left, which nobody can do anything about." Just how *spontaneously* (!) this "movement to the left" has been welcomed is shown by the fact that the Peiping government has had to murder some forty million Chinese to keep itself in power and has — according to its own figures — had to suppress more than *five million* insurrections! Just how *spontaneous* was the "movement to the left", represented at a far different level, and in different degree, by the nomination of Eisenhower instead of Taft in 1952, is shown by the fact that the president of one of America's largest banks took suitcases full of currency to the convention, to bribe delegates away from Taft; and that he was rewarded, for thus providing such *spontaneity*, by a major ambassadorship.

Five years ago the White People and the Negroes of our

South, more peacefully inclined towards each other than at any time since the Civil War, were making tremendous progress in the solving of our difficult racial problem. But with the help of a huge book written by a Swedish collaborator of yours, of a Communist-contrived Supreme Court decision, of white Communists sent to serve as "secretaries" to notoriety-seeking Negro preachers, of a whole school for agitation run by Communists in Tennessee, and of ten thousand other acts and methods skillfully designed by your agents to stir up bitterness and riots, the Whites and Negroes of the South are now giving dangerous vents to an increasing hatred — all, naturally, because of this *spontaneous* "movement to the left."

Of course the whole argument is camouflage for conspiracy, and the very words have been put into American minds and mouths by your agents. But even when we write a hundred pages of completely proved history, to show that every detail of causation behind even some minor event was conspiratorial rather than ideological, the ordinary American replies: "Oh, but the Communists are not that clever. You give them too much credit." While in your mind, Comrade Khrushchev, the almost infinite amount of cunning and implementation, regularly meshed together by your organization, has always been justified by the prize at stake. We are fully conscious of the size of the job you have done in this country, of hiding your hand and your cleverness in an all-pervasive fog of cleverness itself. We know from actual experience the frustrating near-impossibility of dispelling that fog at any point for any moment — and how quickly it closes in again. We do not underrate any of the advantages which you hold.

And Your Loathesome Tactics . . .

Finally, we know we cannot fight you with your kind of weapons. For you and your agents are prepared to use — will delight in using — every foulness which you have tried so successfully in the past, in order to accomplish your purposes. A pragmatic amorality — the lack of any belief in moral absolutes, or any conception of good or bad — is a fundamental philosophic principle of your following. While we, fighting to save our civilization as well as our lives, must confine ourselves to civilized means and methods. We not only believe that there are other ends to an individual's life than the pursuit of personal power and the conversion of humankind into a soul-less serfdom to the state. We believe that even the means used by each of us separately, and all of us collectively, to achieve those various ends, however noble — or even to defend ourselves — must conform to basic ideas of right or wrong. These concepts have evolved over thousands of years as common factors in all of our great religions. You and your fellow barbarians of the Kremlin, as well as those suave savages who work for you in America, are counting on the handicaps, imposed on us by the very things we are fighting for, to help you and them to destroy us.

Do Not Frighten Us Enough . . .

We know all of these things, Comrade Khrushchev, and a great many other reasons for discouragement. Yet — and this, at last, is the whole point of our letter — we do not share the defeatism of our learned friends. Maybe that is why; we are not scholarly enough to accept any verdict in advance; or — in a more vernacular expression — to know when we are licked. For we do know that history is full of apparently lost causes that still emerged victorious. We simply refuse to be licked; and for that reason, among others, we do not think that we shall be.

While You Tremble At Your Risk . . .

For we have one all-powerful weapon, Comrade Khrushchev, and our only need is to get it unsheathed. That weapon is the truth. To unsheathe it we must make the American people understand what is really taking place, and how, and why — and we must do this before it is too late. This — simply having the American people realize the truth — is the only thing in all

the world today that you and your cohorts fear. But because of your fear of this one possibility, you still live, behind your ghoulish grins, in a constant state of sweat and strain and terror. As well you should.

But There Is One Way Out . . .

This may sound like ants challenging an elephant. But elephants have been killed by ants in the past, and the wise elephant does not get himself hopelessly entangled in an angry swarm. This warning is the fundamental justification for this letter. There is one, and only one, possible course which might extricate both you and us from the impasse to which your conspiratorial schemes have now brought us all. This is, simply give up and *call off* your conspiracy. Put all of your energy and cleverness into raising the mental and physical living standards of the Russian people. Everything in the whole world-wide horror and turmoil you have caused can then be handled and eventually straightened out, within the framework of civilized human relationships. And you will become a man who really changed the course of history, in a happier direction, instead of merely a nasty blot on one of its gloomiest pages.

VIII

WE DO NOT EXPECT you to heed this advice, Comrade Khrushchev, so we shall not belabor the argument. Having made this "positive" approach, for the sake of fairness and however little consideration you might give it, we continue with a "negative" warning which you are better able to understand. There are now many thousands of us in America — of whom this writer is only one unimportant example — who have given up careers, incomes, possessions, all hopes of personal peace and leisure, and their whole lives, to the one task of alerting as many of our fellow citizens as we can to the methods and the menace of the Communist conspiracy. Our numbers, our strength, and our experience are growing together. We have leaders who are now veterans in this fight — Fulton Lewis, Clarence Manion,

Dan Smoot, Bonner Fellers, Frank Kirkpatrick, Frank Hanighen, and a hundred more I could name — and who, despite your vicious efforts to smother them, are increasing their total influence every week. And at least the progress of your conspiracy, though not its methods, becomes daily easier to demonstrate to those we can persuade to listen.

We Find Encouragement, Too . . .

We are denied the use of most of the newspapers, magazines, television programs, radio programs, and even book-publishing channels, which already have large established audiences — by your binding influence exerted in ways too numerous, too subtle, and too powerful for us to delineate them here. But we are finding ways to run your blockade, and to reach with print or voice a still small but increasing percentage of the people of this country. Also, we are helped mightily by one intangible aid — the intuition of our "grass-roots" neighbors. For while the American people do not know what is wrong, nor have any idea how badly it is wrong, they sense that something *is*. Despite all of the specious explanations given them, to account for our steady loss of ground, they are vaguely but deeply disturbed. And with the new converts we are gaining daily, who in turn become crusaders for this same enlightenment, our new enrollments are going to increase faster than you can smear us out of effectiveness, or silence us by murder.

Just suppose, Comrade Khrushchev — and shudder at the possibility — that this very letter were placed in the hands of, and read by, only one million Americans. It might set off a chain reaction of truth-seeking which would rip your whole blanket of lies and subtle censorship into shreds — something you fear infinitely more than all of our hydrogen bombs and NATO alliances. It won't happen. Your silencers are too well entrenched for that. Full many an effort like this, each one reaching its comparatively few thousands, will have to be sweated out by many minds, before we blast any decisive holes in that entrenchment. We know that the momentum of your

spreading, descending power in America is tremendous. It is far greater than any offsetting resistance we can hope to create in the near future. But the resistance which we do seed wherever we can is now taking root, and growing, and bearing the fruit of more resistance in many fertile plots. We recognize the Herculean task that we face. But we assure you, and warn you, that we shall not give up the fight as long as we breathe; that for each of us who goes down, two will arise to replace him; and that — knowing what you hope most — we shall not despair.

In Knowledge Of The Past . . .

For, contrary to another of your vaunted lies, Comrade Khrushchev, history (or human experience) is clearly on our side. Your British socialist allies know this, if you do not. It is why they felt obliged to subsidize a hack named Toynbee to rewrite history the way they wanted it to appear. For socialism is merely a degenerative disease in a body politic, which will have to be excised out of even your own country, before you can ever become really strong in anything but bluff and cunning, or can rule by any means except cruelty and deception. Conspiracies, no matter how successful for a while, do not last. And human beings simply will not stay enslaved.

And In Our Own Determination . . .

The question is not whether your gang will be destroyed, but when; how much farther you can still go before you will be stopped, and routed. Your planning is terrific, your patience superb, and your ambition is truly epic. You may actually reach, for a precarious moment, a position of world rulership, with even the United States held formally and temporarily in thrall. But if so, your empire will be blown to bits almost immediately by the forces within it, as was that of Sparta shortly after — by the same kind of infiltration and treason — it conquered Athens and the whole Greek world. And it was Athens, not Sparta, that lasted and contributed to the current of civilization.

Our goal is to see that you do not even get that far, and

there are plenty of us willing to die in the effort. We do not relish sounding melodramatic, Comrade Khrushchev, for melodrama *should be* out of place in the expression of such sober thoughts. But you have, by the studied theatricality of your incessant maneuvers, deliberately made melodrama the very mood of contemporary existence. So we cannot speak our lines with any effectiveness without climbing onto the same stage where you strut. With embarrassment, but simple earnestness, therefore, let us repeat: There are plenty of us willing to give our lives, whenever necessary, in this battle. All we ask is to make those lives cost you enough. And some of us have given much more thought to that bargain than did Taft, or McCarthy, or many of your lesser victims such as we would be.

Only a few months ago a close personal friend of this writer, who had bought and distributed several thousand dollars worth of our books, was — in our considered opinion — murdered in cold blood by your agents, because he was distributing tens of thousands of dollars worth of other anti-Communist literature also. And so unwilling were our pusillanimous metropolitan press and hamstrung law enforcement agencies to stir up your powerful secret antagonism, that they gladly let this murder ride as an utterly fantastic suicide — just as they did the equally fantastic and unbelievable "suicide" of James Forrestal. But this victim of your "preventive measures" made one mistake. He had not made careful plans as to how his untimely death — from any cause — would create more disturbance in your smooth-running plans than the damage caused you by what he was doing. Some of us will try to do better.

Our "Ancient Founts Of Inspiration" . . .

As for any sneer on your part that this expressed willingness to give life itself for our cause is out-Khrushchev-ing Khrushchev in histrionics, let me try to disillusion you. Nearly two years ago we quoted in this magazine, with premeditated purport, Macaulay's famous lines that now seem to the oversophisticated so much out of date:

"And how can man die better
Than facing fearful odds
For the ashes of his fathers
And the temples of his Gods."

You should get one of your more trusted agents, Comrade Khrushchev, to make a survey of just how often those lines have appeared since, in various little "right-wing" publications throughout the United States. And if your agent is an expert in psychology, he might discover and reveal to you just how accurately those lines express the silent reflections of the men and women who reprinted them. And of many a reader, too. We all must die sometime. And so we ask ourselves, in simple sincerity, just how *can* man die better — especially if in doing so he appreciably reduces the odds against his compatriots in the fight. "Is life so dear, or peace so sweet as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery?" We know that you have been personally responsible, Comrade Khrushchev, for the planned and deliberate murder of literally millions of your fellow human beings. (See *Reader's Digest*, September 1957.) So we know you are not playing. We want you also to know that neither are we.

You boast that you will bury us, and that our grandchildren will live under socialism. Maybe so, Comrade, but we do not believe it. As for your cunning attempt, even in that boast, to deceive us into considering remote a danger which is indeed very close, we see through that, too. There is far more likelihood that we, of the present generation, will live for a while — those of us who do live — under your gang's dominion, than that our grandchildren will. For freedom will have been restored by then, at whatever cost.

Your Lack Of Any Support Of The Spirit . . .

The ultimate reason, however, Comrade Khrushchev, for our confidence that in the long run it is we who shall bury your conspiracy — instead of your burying us—lies in the difference

in what we are fighting for. You cannot base a "way of life" on the cruelty, repression, exploitation, lies, deception, amorality, and eternal scheming and jockeying for personal power, of a ruling class that constitutes less than five percent of a population, and then expect loyalty to that "way of life" and to that ruling class on the part of the regimented and oppressed serfs, when the showdown comes. Just where, Comrade Khrushchev, do you find the men who are willing to die to defend the lies and cruelty — to themselves — of their masters? Remember Kiev. You had been the absolute autocrat of the Ukraine for twelve years, when you made your impassioned speech that your capital city defend itself valiantly against the oncoming German armies. Four days later Kiev surrendered without firing a shot.

With so large a proportion of your own subjects your bitterest enemies, as is shown by your constant concern with possible insurrection, how can you expect them to become your loyal supporters for the purpose of enslaving others? Even the millions wearing uniforms in your armed forces, and subject to all the brutal discipline and indoctrination of your "democratic" army, could not be trusted for a minute. Remember how, near the end of World War II, one detachment after another of your troops, even while breathing victory in their nostrils, surrendered enthusiastically to General Vlasow's army in German uniform — just as soon as they discovered that this army was led by a Russian bent on liberating Russia from your rule? Or remember that, even in suppressing the Hungarian Revolt, you did not dare trust your European soldiers, but sent tanks armed by Mongolians, who had no understanding of why they were fighting, or of whom. Of what avail your missiles or your submarines or planes, if those who man them have nothing to die for, when the time comes to use these weapons in war against your enemies?

And Our Loyalties That Go Beyond Patriotism . . .

We, it is true, are complacent with prosperity, justly dis-

trustful of much of our leadership, divided among ourselves, and now greatly lacking in the moral stamina and fearless patriotism of our fathers. But we have an inheritance of freedom and a traditional "way of life", which we have ourselves enjoyed, and which a vast majority of us feel is worth any sacrifice to maintain for our descendants. While many of us consciously, and most of us unconsciously, have a motivation, Comrade Khrushchev, which goes even deeper. It is a loyalty to the best in human nature, to the ideals of truth and justice and compassion and individual integrity, which man has slowly and haltingly acquired over thousands of years. We do not believe that the toil and teaching through the ages, of the saints and the philosophers, the fighters and the poets, the workers and the dreamers, who have created such civilization as we now have, are to be cast aside as useless and in vain. We may blindly lose our gratitude, our perspective, and our vision for the future, during absorption in the little games that constitute our daily lives. But underneath all of this apparent callousness, we have a pride in what has been created for us by the noblest minds and soundest builders among those who have gone before. And the most important element in all of this inheritance, material or spiritual — formed by the contributions of millions of men, each trying to be more worthy of the life given him by whatever Concept of the Divine he worshipped — *is the composite human conscience.*

Will Bring The World Another Morning After This Dark Night . . .

This amorphous but quite palpable total human conscience, Comrade Khrushchev, you and your power-hungry fellow conspirators against civilization would utterly spurn and destroy. But we are sure that, instead, its influence will bring about your own destruction. For we "doubt not through the ages one increasing purpose runs". *And that eternal purpose is not cruelty, lies, and tyranny, but kindness, truth, and freedom.* It is against the power of that unswerving long-range

purpose that your foul and degrading conspiracy will break to pieces. And better men of a better age will wonder how their ancestors could have tolerated, and been frightened by, such beasts as you and your fellow criminals — for even so brief a moment in the life story of the human race.

—Robert Welch

OZYMANDIAS OF EGYPT

I met a traveler from an antique land
Who said: Two vast and trunkless legs of stone
Stand in the desert. Near them, on the sand,
Half sunk, a shattered visage lies, whose frown
And wrinkled lip and sneer of cold command
Tell that its sculptor well those passions read
Which yet survive, stamped on these lifeless things,
The hand that mocked them and the heart that fed;
And on the pedestal these words appear:
"My name is Ozymandias, king of kings:
Look on my works, ye Mighty, and despair!"
Nothing beside remains. Round the decay
Of that colossal wreck, boundless and bare,
The lone and level sands stretch far away.

Percy Bysshe Shelley

ABOUT THIS ARTICLE

These reprints of *A Letter To Khrushchev* will be sent postpaid to any address in the United States, at the following prices:

In Quantities of	3 - 99	3 for $1.00
In Quantities of	100 - 999	25¢ Each
In Quantities of	1,000 or more	20¢ Each

This article first appeared in the April, 1958 issue of AMERICAN OPINION, an informal monthly review edited by Robert Welch. The subscription rate to the magazine is five dollars per year, to any address in the United States and Canada; seven dollars to other countries. For either reprints or subscriptions address

AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts

THE TIME HAS COME

© 1964 by Robert Welch

An Up-to-date Report To Those Who Know The Score

Not to be read for pleasure

Attention, please!

For the time has indeed come, not just to talk of many things, but to face up to them.

And face foursquare!

These subjects for solemn concern fall, literally, into four categories: (a) Facts; (b) what is to be done about them; (c) how much time we still have; and (d), ways and means.

A. Some Frightening Facts

Washington has been taken over!

By which we mean that Communist influences are now in full working control of our Federal Government.

We believe that there is a huge majority of patriotic Americans in both houses of Congress. But political opportunism is rampant there to a dangerous extent. We believe that there is a majority of patriotic Americans in most of the Federal departments. But too many of these bureaucrats, for the sake of "promotion and pay," will yield to pro-Communist pressures. We believe that at least ninety-eight percent of all Federal employees are anti-Communist. It is not how many Communists there are, however, but where they are and who they are, that matters. And we believe that the Communists and their dupes, allies, and agents, throughout this vast apparatus of government, now actually determine almost all policies, actions, and decisions.

Look first at foreign affairs!

The evidence is conclusive. China, Poland, Yugoslavia, Cuba, and Katanga are outstanding examples of Communist conquests, where the chief factor in those conquests was the deliberate aid to the Communists by the United States Government. That aid has steadily become more extensive and more brazen during the past few years.

Right now, by open admission of one of our Ambassadors, our Seventh Fleet is patrolling the Formosa Strait to protect Mao Tse-tung

from Chiang Kai-shek. Other American naval units are off the coast of Venezuela, to protect the Communist regime of Romulo Betancourt and his puppets from being overthrown by his own people. (While Betancourt gives his blessing to the steady killing of anti-Communists in Venezuela by so-called Castroites, and parades these massacres as *attacks on the government*!) All of the money and power of the CIA is being used to prevent, cripple, or betray all efforts of anti-Communist Cuban refugees to overthrow Fidel Castro. And everywhere in the world the State Department is doing everything it can to advance the Communist global conquest.

Next, good friends, look homeward!

Look especially to the South. Ever since 1928 the Communists, for the guidance of their own people, have laid it on the line. Their strategy called for stirring up racial bitterness, for agitation and then rioting over "civil rights," and for promising to convert the Dixie states into a Negro Soviet Republic, as vital parts of their master plan for taking over our country. And for the past few years the Federal Government has been taking steps that fitted as exactly into these Communist designs as if each Administration were simply following Communist orders. In this Administration-backed Communist advance, the rights of individuals, the laws of our states, and the Federal Constitution itself, have been as impudently ignored as if they did not exist.

Other manifestations of the Communist control over our Government are legion. But the most shocking, audacious, and convincing example is also the most recent. When a President of the United States is killed by a Communist within the United States, it is the Communists who determine how and by whom the investigation of the crime is to be conducted. The Warren Commission, with its preemptive claims and Administration pressures shutting off completely all legitimate and proper investigations which were already started—by the Senate Internal Security Subcommittee, the Attorney General of Texas, and the District Attorney of Dallas County—is visibly determined to keep the real facts buried. And this Commission was not only appointed on the insistent demand of the official Communist press of the United States, but the Communists even decreed in advance that their idol, Earl Warren, should be its chairman.

And then look all around you!

For the Communist influence at the top reaches far outside of Government. This influence, at times or in some areas amounting practically to control, is visibly well established and entrenched in the mass communications media, in book and magazine publishing, in education, in the labor union movement, in the entertainment field,

in many other divisions of our national life, and in a great many specific national organizations. This influence is maintained and constantly strengthened through almost infinite pressures, icy ruthlessness, and diabolical cunning.

The evidence to illustrate this situation is encyclopedic, visible on every side, and entirely beyond our limitations here. But this letter is not written to *prove* anything. As stated in the beginning, it is prepared for those who already know the score, as a stimulant to more realistic action. And anybody who still doubts, for instance, that the National Council of Churches is completely dominated by Communist influences, is not going to be of any help to us, or to anybody else, at this stage in our effort to save our country. A major part of our whole undertaking is to wake up such people to the truth—but not through this memorandum.

Only the top, however, is yet lost to the enemy!

The really high percentage of Communists is among the college presidents, not among the high school instructors; among the presidents of large corporations, not among their sales forces; in the high echelons of government, not among its army of clerks. And there are probably more Communists in the State Department alone (out of some forty thousand employees) than there are among the whole several million "dirt farmers" of America.

For the Communists begin at the top, in any country or any organization, and then spread their tentacles downward and outward. They patiently impose their rule over "the masses" by trickery until it is complete enough to be maintained by force and terror. The biggest of all "big lies" is that Communism is a proletarian uprising against exploitation. In our country, especially, the noisy and deluded bums who constitute the known Communist Party are recruited primarily to maintain that useful fiction. The Communist movement, regardless of the idealists who are beguiled into its service, is in essence simply an expanding power drive by a huge and growing organism of amoral international gangsters.

The Communists find the game exciting!

Nor do the appeals and rewards of fellowship within this well groomed criminal circle depend on or wait for ultimate Communist success. As a most important part of the march towards global conquest, these men work at promoting each other with a seriousness, determination, and organized extensiveness that is undreamed of by most of the people around them.

Communist X gets to be President of Ivy College because, for three years before the retirement of the preceding president, just two crypto-Communists on the thirty-man board of trustees, and three

crypto-Communists among the thousand leading alumni, have been quietly, cleverly, but unceasingly getting the idea planted in the minds of the other trustees that Dr. X is the logical man for the job. And it would not be difficult to point to a corporation president, or a lawyer with a great reputation, or a bank president, or the medical head of a great hospital, or a famous editor, or a state governor, or the president of a national professional group, or a powerful figure in any realm of activity, who got where he is today largely through the benefit of the same general technique.

And collectively these top-bracket traitors add up to a lot of weight. The Communist high command can count on practically their total influence to be thrown, with apparent spontaneity and independence on the part of the individuals, behind any drive that is important enough to Communist purposes. But the whole monstrous control of our national course and public attitudes, exercised by this satanic company, still depends on bluff, cunning, audacity, deception, and ruthlessness. The Communists have always proceeded on the principle that if you made enough people *think* you were *winning,* or had the power, then it gradually became true. They are following that course with feverish intensity in America today. All it would take to upset their bandwagon is for enough patriotic Americans to understand the plot. And the Communists know this better than anybody else.

But the Communists now seek a much larger supporting cast!

As soon as they have enough men in top positions they begin reaching down. They start gathering into the total apparatus a growing number of lesser crooks and hypocrits, who will be satisfied with lesser rewards. In some countries, such as Poland in 1946, merely offering a man a ration card which provided a subsistence diet, while his neighbors were dying of starvation, was sufficient inducement to recruit these necessary agents, at the lower levels. (This is why the food our Government provided Menshikov and the Communist conquerors in Poland, through UNRRA funds, was so important a factor in their subjugation of Poland.) In America today the desired and adequate reward is more likely to be gradual promotion from instructor to full professor, or appointment to some middle-level political job, or the windfall of a business contract, or even the mere flattering of a mediocrity's ego by the attention and association of men whom he correctly regards as smarter than himself.

All of this process is now going on steadily around us. It has been for quite a while, and the Communists now have a tremendously larger number of their stooges at the middle and even lower levels of our sociological pyramid than was the case only five years ago. At that time it was certainly an advantage, and perhaps even necessary, for

an ambitious man in our State Department to be a Communist. Today an ordinary insurance salesman, if he learns how to play the game, might find it profitable beyond his fondest expectations. And the journalistic woods are full of small-time editorial writers who might have to make a living washing dishes in a hamburger joint if they had not learned how to prate the Communist line with exactly the required amount of apparent "objectivity."

But—even with all of this now rapid expansion downward, it is doubtful if the Communists yet have more than one percent of our total population within the folds of dependability from their point of view. All of their experience shows that, for a highly industrialized and literate country like the United States, they need a minimum of three percent before they can begin ruling by direct force and police-state brutality, instead of by pulls and pressures and pretended power. They are now working desperately to acquire and establish that three percent in key positions in every community in America. Yet all it takes to reverse their progress in that undertaking too is for enough patriotic Americans to wipe the dust out of their eyes.

B. What Is To Be Done?

Simply spread the truth!

The only possibility of saving our country, and the only thing in the whole world which the Communists fear today, is that enough of the American people can somehow be awakened to what is really taking place—all around them and right under their very noses. While the solution is easy to define, however, the difficulties of achieving it are enormous.

For our enemies are truly "masters of deceit"!

Even intelligent and reasonably informed American patriots will tell you that "it can't happen here." They are assuming that they will know when "it happens," and will then join other good citizens in preventing the Communist take-over. They have been so hypnotized by Communist propaganda, and so blinded by the "big lies" of Communist deception, that they miss the vital point. *It is happening here, right now.* And they are not to be allowed to realize this fact until it is too late for effective resistance. This writer pointed out five years ago, as set forth in the Blue Book, that the transition whereby the Communists themselves would be in charge of our Government—and would then be seeking to put anti-Communists in the position of conspirators against government—was already well under way, with increasing speed and momentum. That transition is practically complete today.

An awakening must come first!

But we also said five years ago that—up to the point of no return, which clearly has not been reached—all we had to do to stop the Communists, and win this struggle against them, was to create sufficient understanding. This is just as true today as it was then. The job is more massive now, because the blanket of obfuscation, which the Communists have so carefully and continuously woven to hide the truth from the American people, is both thicker and more extensive today than it was then. But there are also a great many more people aware of the truth today, and working with tremendous dedication to pierce more and even larger holes in that blanket.

Understanding must be the force, political action the mechanics, of our salvation!

The John Birch Society, as a body, takes no hand in partisan politics. Which leads some people to think that we eschew or belittle political action. Nothing could be further from the truth. In our monthly bulletins we repeatedly exhort our members to "be good citizens at all times," which certainly includes living up to their political responsibilities. Our members as individuals, and through their political parties, clubs, or affiliations, play a tremendous part in politics—as they certainly will during this campaign year of 1964.

But we are too well aware of the realities of the situation to think that "outsmarting" the enemy politically offers any prospect of saving our country. Political action on the part of Conservatives today, to have any chance of being successful, must stem from, be supported by, and *be a part of,* a massive educational program to bring the truth to the American people.

A candidate does not have to agree with us, and we certainly do not agree with each other, in all particulars—even as to the extent and the nature of the menace to our freedom. This writer ardently supported Robert Taft in 1952, despite a strong disagreement with him over about thirty percent of the policies Taft advocated. And we are sure that most of our members will feel the same way about various Conservative leaders today. But supporting any candidate who will not use his candidacy, and the opportunity thus given him of reaching larger audiences, to bring out the truth about our danger and our needs, is to follow exactly the course that the Communists have chosen for us. We have been pouring money and energy down that drain for nearly three decades—and moving closer to a Communist takeover every year. Effective Conservative political action can only come as the implementation of the forces of public opinion created by an understanding of the present crisis. The enemy is too well entrenched at the core of both political parties for the traditional methods and principles of old fashioned American politics to have validity today.

And understanding depends on truth, not on half truths!

The role of The John Birch Society, therefore, even in an election year, is to keep right on spreading the truth—and not to start sweeping parts of it under the rug because of political opportunism. The only way the American people can be brought to understand what Dean Rusk is doing to help Castro today is by showing what his predecessor, Christian Herter, did to establish Castro in power. And the only way they can be brought to understand Robert Kennedy's part, in the increasing racial turmoil and bitterness in the South, is by showing them the real significance of some of the earlier pro-Communist decisions of the Warren Supreme Court. The fact that some of these people are Democrats and some are Republicans is of no importance, compared to the truth which must be understood. This truth is not only that identically the same influences are responsible for the actions of all these men, but that these influences are carrying out the plans of a conspiracy which is determined to bury us.

It is imperative that we hew to the line of the truth—of the whole truth—let the chips fly where they may. In the first place even if a Conservative anti-Communist could be elected to high office today, without the underpinning of a massive educational program on which to conduct his campaign, it would be a Pyrrhic victory, leading to developments which would further damage or entirely destroy the anti-Communist cause. For in our opinion, these Communist influences within the upper echelons of our Government today, are visibly so powerful, so entrenched, and so reinforced by parallel Communist influences outside of Government, that not even a Taft in the White House could control them—unless and until the American people are awakened to the real significance of so many actions and events. In the second place, not even a Taft could be elected today, except by the means which we believe Taft would have used—namely, a massive crusade to enlighten the American people about what is happening to them.

All we must do to win is to create sufficient understanding!

Let us repeat, and summarize—and illustrate by being specific. If and when Barry Goldwater is nominated and elected—and as would be the case if Strom Thurmond were nominated and elected—he is certainly going to need the backing of an awakened American people. Our job, in an election year, as in any other year, is to wake them up. All we do in that direction will help good Conservative candidates to get elected. It will strengthen their hands after election. It will be building up brakes against further movement to the left by the Liberals who win or retain high offices. And if the Conservatives who win in

1964 are too few, we must have the momentum of an awakening populace, and move ahead with that momentum.

Our work to create an understanding of the danger is not a gamble, in which we win or lose. It offers the *one sure road* on which all of our efforts and sacrifices are cumulative towards building the forces of opinion that will save our country. Our undertaking is to do *the one thing which the Communist conspiracy cannot withstand,* and that is simply to expose it. Our strategy is education, our weapon is truth. And all it will take for truth to prevail is sufficient pains to bring it to light. This is a mammoth job, but one which is clearly defined, and on which we have already made encouraging progress.

C. How Much Time Do We Have?

It is late!

But it is not five minutes to twelve, as one able and patriotic general kept mistakenly telling Congressional committees several years ago—thereby unintentionally doing the anti-Communist cause a lot of harm. And if you simply must measure the contest against a twenty-four hour scale, we would say that it is now eight o'clock in the evening, or a little after eight.

The analogy, however, is both silly and misleading. A clock striking twelve is something finite, exact, and recognized by everybody who is interested. While the Communist takeover of our country, *which has already begun,* is as imperceptible as the tide rising in a marsh, and as continuous as the second hand running around a clock face. If the event we have in mind is the formal conversion of the United States into a collection of various "Soviet Republics" within the worldwide Communist empire, and if the Communists are successful, then the most likely date seems to be in the early 1970's. At the present rate of the tide's rising, however, all effective opposition, and all normal means of resistance, will have been submerged long before that time.

Our danger is not sudden destruction, but gradual encroachment!

The Communists avoid every pitched battle, if they can, until they have already won that battle in advance by paralyzing their enemy. And you can be sure that in this culminating contest of their long drive for world rule, they are using all of the insidiousness which they have refined out of decades of experience. We must recognize the patient gradualism with which they blunt or take away the tools of their opposition; the infinite number of Lilliputian threads with which

they slowly strait-jacket their enemies; the professional deception and audacity with which they mesmerize the public into blaming their opponents for the very crime they are themselves committing. All of these cunning and ruthless measures of invisible warfare constitute the advance we have to worry about, and not any frontal attack of which the shots can be heard and the results can be clearly seen.

The Communists within our country are carrying on this kind of warfare right now, with all patriotic anti-Communist groups and leaders as their primary targets. They can easily have made such devastating progress by the end of 1964, that thereafter they will have only enfeebled enemies to deal with and destroy. We do not have to win this war this year, and in fact this writer is sure that we cannot. But we do have to *gain strength* massively throughout 1964, in order to prevent the crippling division and discrediting and demoralization and disarmament of the anti-Communist forces. We can then carry this fight on, into the 1965-1968 period, with further increasing strength until we win. And while everything done courageously by true Conservatives on the political front will certainly help, the acquisition of sufficient strength for these purposes depends basically on our ability to convince enough of our fellow citizens as to what the Communists are trying to do—and how they are trying to do it.

D. Ways And Means

We have the ways!

Let us repeat from a recent bulletin that our shipping room is now pouring out printed material every week with an average—and genuine—retail value of over twenty thousand dollars. This includes the ONE DOZEN CANDLES; many other titles in our Dollar Reprint Series, such as *46 Angry Men,* or Manning Johnson's *Color, Communism, and Common Sense;* the Blue Book of the Society; the monthly magazine, *American Opinion;* hardbound books published by Western Islands; a huge number of pamphlets of many kinds and from many sources; and an equally large number of flyers and folders of great variety. And these materials are all purchased, so they are being read.

Somewhere in the United States now, every night (with such rare exceptions as Christmas), there are from twenty to sixty full film presentations being made to interested small groups, by representatives of The John Birch Society. And the impact of these presentations, towards waking people up and stirring them to action, can be indicated best by the fact that around twenty percent of those in attendance then promptly join the Society. While most of the other eighty percent are certainly made more alert than they were.

And can devise more!

Actually, because the cards have now been so stacked by Communist pressures against the distribution of anti-Communist literature, we have had to create our own ways for carrying on our educational program. But our Speakers Bureau, with its own staff of several regional managers in the field, now has several tours of Conservative speakers going on at any given time. Our "reading rooms that sell books," scattered across the country—although too sparsely as yet—are doing a grand job of selling the best Conservative literature of other publishers as well as our own publications. Altogether, despite all of the barriers raised against the truth, we have developed many excellent *ways* for effectively enlightening the patriotic citizens we can reach.

It is this combination of our methods, with our structure and our longrange constructive purposes, which makes us unique in the whole history of resistance to Communism. Nowhere, in any of the fifty countries or areas they have already taken over, has there been a sizeable, growing, and tightly knit body of good citizens dedicated to the task of exposing and revealing the truth about what was taking place. The John Birch Society is something new in this fifty-years war. Not only have the Communists never faced this form of opposition before or anywhere else, but they have never believed it would be possible. For they were certain that no such group could ever be held together, working in concert on one course—despite all of the divisive pressures and tactics which the Communists could bring to bear against them. But we have held together, we have stayed on our course, and we grow stronger every month.

We even have the means, if normal growth would be adequate!

We have gradually and industriously climbed to the point where our operating revenue is now at the rate of about two million dollars per year. It has increased by approximately fifty percent in the past twelve months (having been a little over $1,300,000 in 1962). At the same rate of growth we would have operating funds of about six million dollars per year to work with in 1966.

But we cannot wait for normal growth!

For 1966 is too late. The stream of material we are moving into interested hands, and the batches of truth we are taking to interested audiences, are even now having an impact. Otherwise the official American Communist publication, *The Worker,* would not now be devoting at least ten percent of its *total space* every week to laying down the line of smears and lies against The John Birch Society, for their stooges in the "regular" press to pick up and feed the public. But

the whole stream is entirely too small a force against the propaganda flood poured out by our enemies—even with the power of truth to make our brooks run clear and strong. For the Communists now do their pouring from vantage points where they have been establishing themselves for decades. While tremendous funds *and pressures* of the Federal Government are now being used in a hundred ways to help them.

The danger is fantastic. So must the resistance be!

We made the same statement five years ago. Too few would believe us—to the point of action. So it is even more true now, because of the progress the Communists have made in the meantime. Today it will require truly *fantastic* measures in order even to be realistic in our opposition to the menace hanging over us.

So let's begin with a fantastic statement!

Fantastic, at least, in its lack of modesty. For we believe that we understand the conspiracy. Not in all of its background, of course; nor as to the identity of all of its top personnel, even in this country; nor in all of its ramifications. But enough to know what has to be done to stop it. *And it can be stopped.* But with all due respect and gratitude for the generous help and unswerving confidence we have been given by so many friends, it is going to take both on a far more realistic level to do this job. And it will take both, fast, in order to do the job in time.

Now we ask for fantastic support!

We do not know how much total expansion on our part it will take to enable us to wake up and alarm enough of the American people. But we do know what our first step towards that total has to be. It is to put on new manpower as fast as we can absorb it and train it; to add new publications and new films and other visual aids as fast as we can produce them; to increase our means and channels of putting these materials to effective use; and to do all of these things as fast as our present base of organization and experience makes possible.

The proper training of men and the effective use of materials — not resources — must be the limitation!

With that consideration as the controlling factor, we need at least four million dollars in 1964, above our present regular operating revenue—making a total of six million in all *now*, for this very year. It is a fantastic demand—but you had better consider the fantastically

horrible alternative. Consider too that, unless we do stop the Communists, none of the money or property you possess is going to have any value or significance much longer—except as an added reason for the Communists to make you and your family an early victim of their terror.

Do we really mean to stop the Communists?

Well, *some of us do*. And let's be blunt about it. We are not asking anybody else to make any contributions greater than our own. For seven years, except for one recent short vacation, I have worked seven days and nights per week for this cause, without pay; and I have now put most of my savings right into the same hopper. We have members of our field staff who have continuously made almost incredible sacrifices, simply because they believe in the Society, in what they are doing, and in the urgency of our need. We have many members, as illustrated by the letters accompanying this folder, who are equally realistic and equally dedicated, with regard to both the problem and the answer.

With rare exceptions, however, our most affluent members and friends are still deceiving themselves, even now, that Communism is an academic kind of menace, which will keep on carrying out its purposes through arguments and politics, instead of by tortures and mass executions; or that the coming holocaust can be prevented without any really painful sacrifices on their part, or any disruption of their property or their lives. Which is what even the informed well-to-do people in Cuba thought only five years ago. Ask some of them now, if they could do it over, what percentage of their wealth they would have been willing to give to telling their fellow citizens the truth about Castro, and thus to stopping him while there was time. Or what good the wealth they "saved" is to them today.

If The John Birch Society does not stop the Communists, who will?

We do mean business. God willing, and with His help—when and because we have deserved it—we are going to win this struggle. We do not claim any possibility of doing the job alone. We count on all of the great efforts of hundreds of other patriotic groups, and on the awakened common sense of millions of plain citizens. But where else are you going to find the leadership, the sense of direction, the cohesiveness of effort, the hard core of determination, the example of courage and dedication, and the realistic appraisal of the enemy, as supplied by The John Birch Society and its membership, around which sufficient strength can be rallied for this battle to the death with the most vicious and powerful conspiracy the world has ever known?

For five years we have been telling everybody we could reach what needed to be done, and what we could do if we could obtain the necessary support. We got just enough people to believe us, and to help us enough, so that we have grown into the one enemy of the Communists whom they really fear—as you can readily verify by a persistent enough reading of the Communist press in Russia and in America. But that is not enough. We must become large enough and strong enough to meet the Communist lies with truth on a comparable scale. We still have a chance, but it is getting close to the last chance. And what are *you* really going to do about it—not next year, or next fall, or next summer, but right now?

We are sorry to sound so urgent. But we didn't make this world this way. We are only trying to do our part to save it.

Sincerely,

Robert Welch

Robert Welch
For The John Birch Society

The letters on the following two pages are both reprinted in this pamphlet with the specific permission of their respective authors.

On the back cover there is a reproduction, greatly reduced, of our full-page advertisement, THE TIME HAS COME, which first appeared the middle of December, 1963, in the New York *Times*, the Washington *Post*, the Chicago *Tribune*, the St. Louis *Globe Democrat*, the Salt Lake City *Tribune*, the Oakland *Tribune*, the Los Angeles *Times*, and a few other papers. Since then this advertisement has been placed by our members in their local newspapers in almost all parts of the country.

Additional quantities of this *Finance Appeal* are available to anybody, in any quantity, at the price of 20 for $1.00, postage paid.

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY, Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

Business Address
52 N. Main St., Carbondale, Pa.
Phone 282-4250

Frank W. Gaydosh

Home Address
R. D. 2, Uniondale, Pa.
Phone 679-3311

MAY GOD HAVE MERCY ON US, if we forget!
The objective of Soviet Communism is to enslave the World!

January 3, 1964

The John Birch Society
Belmont 78
Massachusetts

Gentlemen:

As a businessman, I have always tried to anticipate and prepare for all the risks connected with my home and business.

I carry fire, windstorm damage and liability insurance on my home.

I can carry workmen's compensation, comprehensive liability, fire and theft insurance on my business.

I have life insurance in event that I die to take care of my family.

I have a retirement policy to take care of me when I'm too old to work.

I have prepared for all eventualities except one.

A friend of mine in Cuba had all the above coverage and yet he lost everything. He didn't have the <u>most important insurance in the world TODAY!</u> <u>ANTI-COMMUNISM INSURANCE</u>

I am not going to make the same mistake as my Cuban friend made. As of today, I am buying ANTI-COMMUNISM INSURANCE.

While there are other good companies selling ANTI-COMMUNISM INSURANCE, I think the best is THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY.

I am enclosing my check for One Hundred ($100.00) Dollars as my January ANTI-COMMUNISM INSURANCE payment and will continue to send at least $100.00 per month until further notice.

Yours for God and Country,

Frank W. Gaydosh

37079 - JAN 8 1964

Enc. check

CITIZEN'S CODE OF CONDUCT
"I will never forget that I am an American Citizen, responsible for my actions, and dedicated to the principles that made my country free. I will Trust in God and in the United States of America."

10 Wright Place
Scarsdale, N.Y.
December 29, 1963

JAN 2 1964

Mr. Robert Welch
Belmont 78, Mass.

Dear Mr. Welch:

IN the December bulletin you state that the next 12 months immediately ahead of us now seem to offer us our last best chance of pulling together enough strength and a sufficiently expanded organization to make the odds more manageable. I've been a member for 2 years now, and that's long enough to know that you have a habit of proving right.

Even though I work hard at our Birch projects studying, writing, and chapter leader, I was still shocked by this statement in our December bulletin. I realized it was time to do some serious thinking and adding.

We are not rich, in fact wellive in a 4-room apartment and are expecting our 4th child in the middle of January. We have skrimped and saved during the 6 years we've been married (and before) and now have been able to save enough money for a small downpayment on a house. The thought of having a yard for our children to play in made the sacrifices necessary to save this money easy. The thought of having our children taken away from us and brought up under this Godless barbaric tyranny make bunk beds in their present room a very pleasant reality, and we pray, alternative.

I am enclosing a check for $1,000 for my lifetime membership. I hope if things go all right to also raise our donations in the M.M.M. If, as you say, the next twelve months are so vitally important, I think it is of the utmost necessity that a real campaign for lifetime memberships be started. If many of our members realize the importance of the next twelve months, I am sure they will be willing to sacrifice $1,000. Even if they don't have the amount, they can borrow it from a bank and pay it back over a period of several years, (as time permits). If 5,000 members sent in lifetime memberships, that would add up to $5 million dollars. If 50,000 members did, it would give you $50 million to work with in the next twelve months.

You say yourself, all we need is the resources to make rapid enough additions to our educational army. Why worry about houses, cars and college? Let's get the resources to save this Judeo-Christian civilization before this most important year is gone.

Very truly yours,

Ronald J. Stanlesh.

36399-1 JAN 8 1964

THE TIME HAS COME

The President of the United States has been murdered by a Marxist-Communist within the United States.

It has been pointed out by the Hon. Martin Dies, since the assassination, that "Lee Harvey Oswald was a Communist," and that when a Communist commits murder he is acting under orders. The former Congressman, head of the original Dies Committee, is probably second only to J. Edgar Hoover in first-hand knowledge acquired from early and long experience in investigating Communist activities.

The Hon. J. Edgar Hoover said in a speech on October 18, 1960: "We are at war with the Communists, and the sooner each red-blooded American realizes that the better and safer we will be." He emphatically repeated this statement on December 3, 1963 - - ten days after the assassination. And this is none the less war because the Communists conduct it according to their usual methods, without regard to civilized rules or human decency.

Nor is it in character for the Communists to rest on this success. Instead, we can expect them to use the shock, grief, and confusion of the American people, resulting from the assassination of our President, as an opportunity for pushing their own plans faster. Also, we shall be subjected to an ever greater barrage of distortions and falsehoods, aimed at imposing on the nation a completely false picture of the situation and of the forces at work. They have to subvert our minds as well as our institutions.

For five years The John Birch Society has said that, regardless of the external threat, Communism was a serious internal menace in the United States. And we were right. This has now been proved, tragically but conclusively, to the deep sorrow, but also to the profound alarm, of all good Americans. The time has come for those good Americans to join us in this fight against the powerfully organized "masters of deceit." For, as Edmund Burke once wrote: "When bad men combine, the good must associate; else they will fall one by one, an unpitied sacrifice in a contemptible struggle."

The John Birch Society is an *educational* army, and our only weapon is the truth. But George Washington stated our problem well: "Truth will ultimately prevail where there is pains taken to bring it to light." We take tremendous pains in proportion to our numbers and our strength, and all we need to win is that enough other patriots join us in our determination and our labors. For there is nothing the Communists fear so much in the whole world today as having the American people learn, too soon, the truth about their purposes, their methods, and their progress.

If you oppose the Communist conspiracy by learning and spreading the truth, you may expect to be smeared as viciously as we have been for five years. But you will be helping to save your family and your country from the same cruel tyranny that has already been imposed on a billion human beings.

The time has come for every red-blooded American to react as such. If you have the willingness to learn and the courage to support the disturbing truth, use the coupon below. It will be without any obligation on your part, and we shall not contact you further unless or until you request us to do so.

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY
Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

Executive Committee: Wm. J. Grede, A. G. Heinsohn, Jr., Fred C. Koch, Clarence E. Manion, R. W. Stoddard

Please Note

If you agree with this statement, and are willing to help us put this message in as many newspapers as possible across our country, send us your contribution now. Make your check out to *Special Advertising Fund*, and mail it directly to:

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY,
Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

The John Birch Society
Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

Gentlemen:

☐ Please send me, without cost or obligation on my part, a sheet of preliminary information about the Society.

☐ For the enclosed one dollar, please send me *your Introductory Packet* of THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY.

(Check the box that applies.)

☐ For the enclosed five dollars please send me *your Special Packet*, containing the basic materials from which I can obtain a thorough understanding of what The John Birch Society is, how it works, and what it hopes to do.

Sincerely,

(Name) _____

(Address) _____

_____

REPUBLICS
and
DEMOCRACIES

proper form and limitation of government, when the people try to rule themselves, which concerns us here today.

Their History...

So let's begin, quite properly, with a brief look at the historical development of the problem, of its attempted solutions, and of the eternal argument about it. For here, in my opinion, as in every other field of human thought and activity, it is not possible fully to understand the present except as a projection of the past.

II

THE FIRST SCENE in this drama, on which the curtain clearly lifts, is Greece of the Sixth Century B.C. The city of Athens was having so much strife and turmoil, primarily as between its various classes, that the wisest citizens felt something of a more permanent nature, rather than just a temporary remedy, had to be developed—to make possible that stability, internal peace, and prosperity which they had already come to expect of life in a civilized society. And through one of those fortunate accidents of history, which surprise us on one side by their rarity and on the other side by ever having happened at all, these citizens of Athens chose an already distinguished fellow citizen, named Solon, to resolve the problem for both their present and their future. They saw that Solon was given full power over every aspect of government and of economic life in Athens. And Solon, applying himself to the specific job, time, and circumstances, and perhaps without any surmise that he might be laboring for lands and centuries other than his own, proceeded to establish in "the laws of Solon" what amounted to, so far as we know, the first written regulations whereby men ever proposed to govern themselves. Undoubtedly even Solon's decisions and his laws were but projections and syntheses of theories and practices which had already been in existence for a long time. And yet his election as Archon of Athens, in 594 B.C., can justly be considered as the date of a

whole new and huge approach to man's eternal problem of government.

Began In Greece...

There is no question but that the laws and principles which Solon laid down both foreshadowed and prepared the way for all republics of later ages, including our own. He introduced, into the visible record of man's efforts and progress, the very principle of "government by written and permanent law" instead of "government by incalculable and changeable decrees." (Will Durant). And he himself set forth one of the soundest axioms of all times, that it was a well-governed state "when the people obey the rulers and the rulers obey the laws." This concept, that there were laws which even kings and dictators must observe, was not only new; I think it can be correctly described as "western."

Here was a sharp and important cleavage at the very beginning of our western civilization, from the basic concept that always had prevailed in Asia, which concept still prevailed in Solon's day, and which in fact remained unquestioned in the Asiatic mind and empires until long after the fall of the Roman Empire of the East, when Solon had been dead two thousand years.

Which Stopped With Democracy...

Unfortunately, while Solon's laws remained in effect in Athens in varying degrees of theory and practice for five centuries, neither Athens nor any of the Greek city-states ever achieved the form of a republic, primarily for two reasons. First, Solon introduced the permanent legal basis for a republican government, but not the framework for its establishment and continuation. The execution, observance, and perpetuation of Solon's laws fell naturally and almost automatically into the hands of tyrants, who ruled Athens for long but uncertain periods of time, through changing forms and administrative

procedures for their respective governments. And second, the Greek temperament was too volatile, the whole principle of self-government was too exciting—even through a dictator who might have to be overthrown by force—for the Athenians ever to finish the job Solon had begun, and bind themselves as well as their rulers down to the chains of an unchanging constitution. Even the authority of Solon's laws had to be enforced and thus established by successive tyrants like Pisistratus and Cleisthenes, or they might never have amounted to anything more than a passing dream. The ideal was there, of rule according to written laws; and the fact that those laws were at times and to some extent honored or observed constituted one huge step towards—and fulfilled one prerequisite of—a true republic.

But the second great step, of a government framework as fixed and permanent as the basic laws were supposed to be, remained for the Romans and other heirs of Greece to achieve. As a consequence Athens—and the other Greek city-states which emulated it—remained politically as democracies, and eventually learned from their own experiences that it was probably the worst of all forms of government.

III

BUT OUT OF THE DEMOCRACIES OF GREECE, as tempered somewhat by the laws of Solon, there came as a direct spiritual descendant the first true republic the world has ever known. This was Rome in its earlier centuries, after the monarchy had been replaced. The period is usually given as from 509 B.C. to 49 B.C., Rome having got rid of its kings by the first of those dates, and having turned to the Caesars by the second. But the really important early date is 454 B.C., when the Roman Senate sent a commission to Greece to study and report on the legislation of Solon. The commission, consisting of three men, did its work well. On its return the Roman Assembly chose ten men —and hence called the Decemviri—to rule with supreme power while formulating a new code of laws for Rome. And in 454 B.C.

they proposed, and the Assembly adopted, what were called *The Twelve Tables*. This code, based on Solon's laws, became the written constitution of the Roman Republic.

But Rome Inherited This Start...

The Twelve Tables, "amended and supplemented again and again—by legislation, praetorial edicts, *senatus consulta,* and imperial decrees—remained for nine hundred years the basic law of Rome." (Durant) At least in theory, and always to some extent in practice, even after Julius Caesar had founded the empire which was recognized as an empire from the time of Augustus. What was equally important, even before the adoption of *The Twelve Tables,* Rome had already established the framework, with firm periodicity for its public servants, of a republic in which those laws could be, and for a while would be, impartially and faithfully administered.

For, as a Roman named Gaius (and otherwise unknown) was to write in about 160 A.D., "all law pertains to persons, to property, and to procedure." And for a satisfactory government you need as much concern about the implementation of those laws, the governmental agencies through which they are to be administered, and the whole political framework within which those laws form the basis of order and of justice, as with the laws themselves which constitute the original statute books. And the Romans contrived and—subject to the exceptions and changes inflicted on the pattern by the ambitions and cantankerous restlessness of human nature—maintained such a framework in actual practice for nearly five hundred years.

The Romans themselves referred to their government as having a "mixed constitution." By this they meant that it had some of the elements of a democracy, some of the elements of an oligarchy, and some of those of an autocracy; but they also meant that the interests of all the various classes of Roman society were taken into consideration by the Roman constitu-

tional government, rather than just the interests of some one class. Already the Romans were familiar with governments which had been founded by, and were responsible to, one class alone: especially "democracies," as of Athens, which at times considered the rights of the proletariat as supreme; and oligarchies, as of Sparta, which were equally biased in favor of the aristocrats. Here again the Roman instinct and experience had led them to one of the fundamental requisites of a true republic.

And Created A Republic...

In summary, the Romans were opposed to tyranny in any form; and the feature of government to which they gave the most thought was an elaborate system of checks and balances. In the early centuries of their republic, whenever they added to the total offices and officeholders, as often as not they were merely increasing the diffusion of power and trying to forestall the potential tyranny of one set of governmental agents by the guardianship or watchdog powers of another group. When the Tribunes were set up, for instance, around 350 B.C., their express purpose and duty was to protect the people of Rome against their own government. This was very much as our Bill of Rights was designed by our Founding Fathers for exactly the same purpose. And other changes in the Roman government had similar aims. The result was a civilization and a government which, by the time Carthage was destroyed, had become the wonder of the world, and which remained so in memory until the Nineteenth Century—when its glories began receding in the minds of men, because surpassed by those of the rising American republic.

Now it should bring more than smiles, in fact it should bring some very serious reflections, to Americans, to realize what the most informed and penetrating Romans, of all eras, thought of their early republic.

It is both interesting, and significantly revealing, to find exactly the same arguments going on during the first centuries B.C. and A.D. about the sources of Roman greatness, that swirl around us today with regard to the United States. Cicero spoke of their "mixed constitution" as "the best form of government." Polybius, in the second century, B.C., had spoken of it in exactly the same terms; and, going further, had ascribed Rome's greatness and triumphs to its form of government. Livy, however, during the days of Augustus, wrote of the virtues that had made Rome great, before the Romans had reached the evils of his time, when, as he put it, "we can bear neither our diseases nor their remedies." And those virtues were, he said, "the unity and holiness of family life, the *pietas* (or reverential attitude) of children, the sacred relation of men with the gods at every step, the sanctity of the solemnly pledged word, the stoic self-control and *gravitas* (or serious sense of responsibility)." Doesn't that sound familiar?

But while many Romans gave full credit to both the Roman character and their early environment, exactly as we do with regard to American greatness today, the nature and excellence of their early government, and its contribution to the building of Roman greatness, were widely discussed and thoroughly recognized. And the ablest among them knew exactly what they were talking about. "Democracy," wrote Seneca, "is more cruel than wars or tyrants." "Without checks and balances," Dr. Will Durant summarizes one statement of Cicero, "monarchy becomes despotism, aristocracy becomes oligarchy, democracy becomes mob rule, chaos, and dictatorship." And he quotes Cicero verbatim about the man usually chosen as leader by an ungoverned populace, as "someone bold and unscrupulous . . . who curries favor with the people *by giving them other men's property.*" (Our emphasis.)

If that is not an exact description of the leaders of the New Deal, the Fair Deal, and the New Frontier, I don't know

where you will find one. What Cicero was bemoaning was the same breakdown of the republic, and of its protection against such demagoguery and increasing "democracy," as we have been experiencing. This breakdown was under exactly the same kind of pressures that have been converting the American republic into a democracy, the only difference being that in Rome those pressures were not so conspiratorially well organized as they are in America today. Virgil, and many great Romans like him were, as Will Durant says, well aware that "class war, not Caesar, killed the Roman Republic." In about 50 B.C., for instance, Sallust had been charging the Roman Senate with placing *property rights* above *human rights*. (Our emphasis.) And we are certain that if Franklin D. Roosevelt had ever heard of Sallust or read one of Sallust's speeches, he would have told somebody to go out and hire this man Sallust for one of his ghost writers at once.

IV

About thirty years ago a man named Harry Atwood, who was one of the first to see clearly what was being done by the demagogues to our form of government, and the tragic significance of the change, wrote a book entitled *Back To The Republic*. It was an excellent book, except for one shortcoming. Mr. Atwood insisted emphatically, over and over, that ours was the first republic in history; that American greatness was due to our Founding Fathers having given us something entirely new in history, *the first republic*—which Mr. Atwood described as the "standard government," or "the golden mean," towards which all other governments to the right or the left should gravitate in the future.

Now the truth is that, by merely substituting the name Rome for the name United States, and making similar changes in nomenclature, Mr. Atwood's book could have been written by Virgil or by Seneca, with regard to the conversion of the *Roman* republic into a democracy. It is only to the extent we

are willing to learn from history that we are able to avoid repeating its horrible mistakes. And while Mr. Atwood did not sufficiently realize this fact, fortunately our Founding Fathers did. For they were men who knew history well and were determined to profit by that knowledge.

The Greek And Roman Experiences...

Also, by the time of the American Revolution and Constitution, the meanings of the words "republic" and "democracy" had been well established and were readily understood. And most of this accepted meaning derived from the Roman and Greek experiences. The two words are not, as most of today's Liberals would have you believe—and as most of them probably believe themselves—*parallels* in etymology, or history, or meaning. The word Democracy (in a political rather than a social sense, of course) had always referred to a type of government, as distinguished from monarchy, or autocracy, or oligarchy, or principate. The word Republic, before 1789, had designated the quality and nature of a government, rather than its structure. When Tacitus complained that "it is easier for a republican form of government to be applauded than realized," he was living in an empire under the Caesars and knew it. But he was bemoaning the loss of that adherence to the laws and to the protections of the constitution which made the nation no longer a republic; and not to the fact that it was headed by an emperor.

The word democracy comes from the Greek and means, literally, government by the people. The word "republic" comes from the Latin, *res publica*, and means literally "the public affairs." The word "commonwealth," as once widely used, and as still used in the official title of my state, "the Commonwealth of Massachusetts," is almost an exact translation and continuation of the original meaning of *res publica*. And it was only in this sense that the Greeks, such as Plato, used the term that has been translated as "republic." Plato was writing about an imaginary "commonwealth"; and while he certainly had strong

ideas about the kind of government this Utopia should have, those ideas were not conveyed nor foreshadowed by his title.

The historical development of the meaning of the word republic might be summarized as follows. The Greeks learned that, as Dr. Durant puts it, "man became free when he recognized that he was subject to law." The Romans applied the formerly general term "republic" specifically to that system of government in which both the people *and their rulers* were subject to law. That meaning was recognized throughout all later history, as when the term was applied, however inappropriately in fact and optimistically in self-deception, to the "Republic of Venice" or to the "Dutch Republic." The meaning was thoroughly understood by our Founding Fathers. As early as 1775 John Adams had pointed out that Aristotle (representing Greek thought), Livy (whom he chose to represent Roman thought), and Harington (a British statesman), all "define a republic to be ——— a government of laws and not of men." And it was with this full understanding that our constitution-makers proceeded to establish a government which, by its very structure, would require that both the people and their rulers obey certain basic laws — laws which could not be changed without laborious and deliberate changes in the very structure of that government. When our Founding Fathers established a "republic," in the hope, as Benjamin Franklin said, that we could keep it, and when they guaranteed to every state within that "republic" a "republican form" of government, they well knew the significance of the terms they were using. And were doing all in their power to make the features of government signified by those terms as permanent as possible. They also knew very well indeed the meaning of the word democracy, and the history of democracies; and they were deliberately doing everything in their power to avoid for their own times, and to prevent for the future, the evils of a democracy.

Let's look at some of the things they said to support and clarify this purpose. On May 31, 1787, Edmund Randolph told his fellow members of the newly assembled Constitutional Convention that the object for which the delegates had met was "to provide a cure for the evils under which the United States labored; that in tracing these evils to their origin every man had found it in the turbulence and trials of democracy. . . ."

Were Well Known To Our Founding Fathers...

The delegates to the Convention were clearly in accord with this statement. At about the same time another delegate, Elbridge Gerry, said: "The evils we experience flow from the excess of democracy. The people do not want (that is, do not lack) virtue; but are the dupes of pretended patriots." And on June 21, 1788, Alexander Hamilton made a speech in which he stated:

> "It had been observed that a pure democracy if it were practicable would be the most perfect government. Experience had proved that no position is more false than this. The ancient democracies in which the people themselves deliberated never possessed one good feature of government. Their very character was tyranny; their figure deformity."

At another time Hamilton said: "We are a Republican Government. Real liberty is never found in despotism or in the extremes of Democracy." And Samuel Adams warned: "Remember, Democracy never lasts long. It soon wastes, exhausts and murders itself! There never was a democracy that 'did not commit suicide.' "

James Madison, one of the members of the Convention who was charged with drawing up our Constitution, wrote as follows:

> ". . . . democracies have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention; have ever been found incompatible with personal security, or the rights of

property; and have in general been as short in their lives as they have been violent in their deaths."

Who Established Our Republic...

Madison and Hamilton and Jay and their compatriots of the Convention prepared and adopted a Constitution in which they nowhere even mentioned the word democracy, not because they were not familiar with such a form of government, but because they were. The word democracy had not occurred in the Declaration of Independence, and does not appear in the constitution of a single one of our fifty states—which constitutions are derived mainly from the thinking of the Founding Fathers of the Republic — for the same reason. They knew all about Democracies, and if they had wanted one for themselves and their posterity, they would have founded one. Look at all the elaborate system of checks and balances which they established; at the carefully worked-out protective clauses of the Constitution itself, and especially of the first ten amendments known as the Bill of Rights; at the effort, as Jefferson put it, to "bind men down from mischief by the chains of the Constitution," and thus to solidify the rule not of men but of laws. All of these steps were taken, deliberately, to avoid and to prevent a Democracy, or any of the worst features of a Democracy, in the United States of America.

V

AND SO OUR REPUBLIC was started on its way. And for well over a hundred years our politicians, statesmen, and people remembered that this was a republic, not a democracy, and knew what they meant when they made that distinction. Again, let's look briefly at some of the evidence.

Washington, in his first inaugural address, dedicated himself to "the preservation . . . . of the republican model of government." Thomas Jefferson, our third president, was the founder of the Democratic Party; but in his first inaugural

address, although he referred several times to the Republic or the republican form of government, he did not use the word "democracy" a single time. And John Marshall, who was Chief Justice of the Supreme Court from 1801 to 1835, said: "Between a balanced republic and a democracy, the difference is like that between order and chaos."

Throughout all of the Nineteenth Century and the very early part of the Twentieth, while America as a republic was growing great and becoming the envy of the whole world, there were plenty of wise men, both in our country and outside of it, who pointed to the advantages of a republic, which we were enjoying, and warned against the horrors of a democracy, into which we might fall. Around the middle of that century, Herbert Spencer, the great English philosopher, wrote, in an article on *The Americans*: "The Republican form of government is the highest form of government; but because of this it requires the highest type of human nature—a type nowhere at present existing." And in truth we have not been a high enough type to preserve the republic we then had, which is exactly what he was prophesying.

And The Dangers Of A Democracy...

Thomas Babington Macaulay said: "I have long been convinced that institutions purely democratic must, sooner or later, destroy liberty or civilization, or both." And we certainly seem to be in a fair way today to fulfill his dire prophecy. Nor was Macaulay's contention a mere personal opinion without intellectual roots and substance in the thought of his times. Nearly two centuries before, Dryden had already lamented that "no government had ever been, or ever can be, wherein time-servers and blockheads will not be uppermost." And as a result, he had spoken of nations being "drawn to the dregs of a democracy." While in 1795 Immanuel Kant had written: "Democracy is necessarily despotism."

In 1850 Benjamin Disraeli, worried as was Herbert Spencer at what was already being foreshadowed in England, made a speech to the British House of Commons in which he said: "If you establish a democracy, you must in due time reap the fruits of a democracy. You will in due season have great impatience of public burdens, combined in due season with great increase of public expenditure. You will in due season have wars entered into from passion and not from reason; and you will in due season submit to peace ignominiously sought and ignominiously obtained, which will diminish your authority and perhaps endanger your independence. You will in due season find your property is less valuable, and your freedom less complete." Disraeli could have made that speech with even more appropriateness before a joint session of the American Congress in 1935. And in 1870 he had already come up with an epigram which is strikingly true for the United States today. "The world is weary," he said, "of statesmen whom democracy has degraded into politicians."

But even in Disraeli's day there were similarly prophetic voices on this side of the Atlantic. In our own country James Russell Lowell showed that he recognized the danger of unlimited majority rule by writing:

"Democracy gives every man
The right to be his own oppressor."

W. H. Seward pointed out that "Democracies are prone to war, and war consumes them." This is an observation certainly borne out during the past fifty years exactly to the extent that we have been becoming a democracy and fighting wars, with each trend as both a cause and an effect of the other one. And Ralph Waldo Emerson issued a most prophetic warning when he said: "Democracy becomes a government of bullies tempered by editors." If Emerson could have looked ahead to the time when so many of the editors would themselves be a part of, or sympathetic to, the gang of bullies, as they are today, he would

have been even more disturbed. And in the 1880's Governor Seymour of New York said that the merit of our Constitution was, not that it promotes democracy, but checks it.

Across the Atlantic again, a little later, Oscar Wilde once contributed this epigram to the discussion: "Democracy means simply the bludgeoning of the people, by the people, for the people." While on this side, and after the first World War had made the degenerative trend in our government so visible to any penetrating observer, H. L. Mencken wrote: "The most popular man under a democracy is not the most democratic man, but the most despotic man. The common folk delight in the exactions of such a man. They like him to boss them. Their natural gait is the goosestep." While Ludwig Lewisohn observed: "Democracy, which began by liberating men politically, has developed a dangerous tendency to enslave him through the tyranny of majorities and the deadly power of their opinion."

Were Well Understood...

But it was a great Englishman, G. K. Chesterton, who put his finger on the basic reasoning behind all the continued and determined efforts of the Communists to convert our republic into a democracy. "You can never have a revolution," he said, "in order to establish a democracy. You must have a democracy in order to have a revolution."

And in 1931 the Duke of Northumberland, in his booklet, *The History of World Revolution,* stated: "The adoption of Democracy as a form of Government by all European nations is fatal to good Government, to liberty, to law and order, to respect for authority, and to religion, and must eventually produce a state of chaos from which a new world tyranny will arise." While an even more recent analyst, Archibald E. Stevenson, summarized the situation as follows: "De Tocqueville once warned us," he wrote, "that: 'If ever the free institutions of America are destroyed, that event will arise from the unlimited

tyranny of the majority.' But a majority will never be permitted to exercise such 'unlimited tyranny' so long as we cling to the American ideals of republican liberty and turn a deaf ear to the siren voices now calling us to democracy. This is not a question relating to the *form* of government. That can always be changed by constitutional amendment. It is one affecting the underlying philosophy of our system — a philosophy which brought new dignity to the individual, more safety for minorities and greater justice in the administration of government. We are in grave danger of dissipating this splendid heritage through mistaking it for democracy."

And there have been plenty of other voices to warn us.

VI

So — how did it happen that we have been allowing this gradual destruction of our inheritance to take place? And when did it start? The two questions are closely related.

For not only every democracy, but certainly every republic, bears within itself the seeds of its own destruction. The difference is that for a soundly conceived and solidly endowed republic it takes a great deal longer for those seeds to germinate and the plants to grow. The American republic was bound—is still bound—to follow in the centuries to come the same course to destruction as did Rome. But our real ground of complaint is that we have been pushed down the demagogic road to disaster by conspiratorial hands, far sooner and far faster than would have been the results of natural political evolution.

Until The Fabian Conspirators...

These conspiratorial hands first got seriously to work in this country in the earliest years of the Twentieth Century. The Fabian philosophy and strategy was imported to America from England, as it had been earlier to England from Germany. Some of the members of the Intercollegiate Socialist Society,

founded in 1905, and some of the members of the League for Industrial Democracy into which it grew, were already a part of, or affiliated with, an international Communist conspiracy, planning to make the United States a portion of a one-world Communist state. Others saw it as possible and desirable merely to make the United States a separate socialist Utopia. But they all knew and agreed that to do either they would have to destroy both the constitutional safeguards and the underlying philosophy which made it a republic. So, from the very beginning the whole drive to convert our republic into a democracy was in two parts. One part was to make our people come to believe that we had, and were supposed to have, a democracy. The second part was actually and insidiously to be changing the republic into a democracy.

The first appreciable and effective progress in both directions began with the election of Woodrow Wilson. Of Wilson it could accurately have been said, as Tacitus had said of some Roman counterpart: "By common consent, he would have been deemed capable of governing had he never governed." Since he did become the President of the United States for two terms, however, it is hard to tell how much of the tragic disaster of those years was due to the conscious support by Wilson himself of Communist purposes, and how much to his being merely a dupe and a tool of Colonel Edward Mandell House. But at any rate it is under Wilson that, for the first time, we see the power of the American presidency being used to support Communist schemers and Communist schemes in other countries—as especially, for instance, in Mexico, and throughout Latin America.

It was under Wilson, of course, that the first huge parts of the Marxian program, such as the progressive income tax, were incorporated into the American system. It was under Wilson that the first huge legislative steps to break down what the Romans would have called our "mixed constitution" of a republic, and convert it into the homogenous jelly of a democracy,

got under way with such measures as the direct election of Senators. And it was under Wilson that the first great propaganda slogan was coined and emblazoned everywhere, to make Americans start thinking favorably of democracies and forget that we had a republic. This was, of course, the slogan of the first World War: "To make the world safe for democracy." If enough Americans had, by those years, remembered enough of their own history, they would have been worrying about how to make the world safe *from* democracy. But the great deception and the great conspiracy were already well under way.

Under Wilson And Then Roosevelt...

The conspirators had to proceed slowly and patiently, nevertheless, and to have their allies and dupes do the same. For in the first place the American people could not have been swept too fast and too far in this movement without enough alarms being sounded to be heard and heeded. And in the second place, after the excitement of World War I had sunk into the past, and America was returning to what Harding called "normalcy," there was a strong revulsion against the whole binge of demagoguery and crackpot idealism which had been created under Woodrow Wilson, and which had been used to give us this initial push on the road towards ultimate disaster. And during this period from 1920 until the so-called great depression could be deliberately accentuated, extended, and increased to suit the purposes of the Fabian conspirators, there was simply a germination period for the seeds of destruction which the conspirators had planted. Not until Franklin D. Roosevelt came to power in 1933 did the whole Communist-propelled and Communist-managed drive again begin to take visible and tangible and positive steps in their program to make the United States ultimately succumb to a one-world Communist tyranny. Most conservative Americans are today well aware of many of those steps and of their significance; but there are still not enough who realize how important to Communist plans was the two-

pronged drive to convert the American republic into a democracy and to make the American people accept the change without even knowing there had been one. From 1933 on, however, that drive and that change moved into high gear, and have been kept there ever since.

Let's look briefly at just two important and specific pieces of tangible evidence of this drive, and of its success in even those early years.

In 1928 the U. S. Army Training Manual, used for all of our men in army uniform, gave them the following quite accurate definition of a democracy: "A government of the masses. Authority derived through mass meeting or any form of 'direct' expression. Results in mobocracy. Attitude toward property is communistic—negating property rights. Attitude toward law is that the will of the majority shall regulate, whether it be based upon deliberation or governed by passion, prejudice, and impulse, without restraint or regard to consequences. Results in demagogism, license, agitation, discontent, anarchy."

That was in 1928. Just when that true explanation was dropped, and through what intermediate changes the definition went, I have not had sufficient time and opportunity to learn. But compare that 1928 statement with what was being said in the same place for the same use by 1952. In *The Soldiers Guide*, Department of the Army Field Manual, issued in June of 1952, we find the following:

> "Meaning of democracy. *Because the United States is a democracy*, the majority of the people decide how our government will be organized and run—and that includes the Army, Navy, and Air Force. The people do this by electing representatives, and these men and women then carry out the wishes of the people." (*Emphasis mine.*)

Now obviously this change from basic truth to superficial demagoguery, in the one medium for mass indoctrination of our youth which has been available to the Federal Government

until such time as it achieves control over public education, did not just happen by accident. It was part of an over-all design, which became both extensive in its reach and rapid in its execution from 1933 on. Let's look at another, less important but equally striking, illustration.

Former Governor Lehman of New York, in his first inaugural message in 1933, did not once use the word democracy. The poison had not yet reached into the reservoirs from which flowed his political thoughts. In his inaugural message of 1935 he used the word "democracy" twice. The poison was beginning to work. In his similar message of 1939 he used the word "democracy," or a derivative thereof, *twenty-five* times. And less than a year later, on January 3, 1940, in his annual message to the New York legislature, he used it thirty-three times. The poison was now permeating every stream of his political philosophy.

Gradually Changed Our Thinking...

By today that same poison has been diffused, in an effective dosage, through almost the whole body of American thought about government. Newspapers write ringing editorials declaring that this is and always was a democracy. In pamphlets and books and speeches, in classrooms and pulpits and over the air, we are besieged with the shouts of the Liberals and their political henchmen, all pointing with pride to our being a democracy. Many of them even believe it. Here we have a clear-cut sample of the Big Lie which has been repeated so often and so long that it is increasingly accepted as truth. And never was a Big Lie spread more deliberately for more subversive purposes. What is even worse, because of their unceasing efforts to destroy the safeguards, traditions, and policies which made us a republic, and partly because of this very propaganda of deception, what they have been shouting so long is gradually *becoming* truth. Despite Mr. Warren and his Supreme Court and all of their allies, dupes, and bosses, we are not yet a democracy. But the

fingers in the dike are rapidly becoming fewer and less effective. And a great many of the pillars of our republic have already been washed away.

Since 1912 we have seen the imposition of a graduated income tax, as already mentioned. Also, as mentioned, the direct election of Senators. We have seen the Federal Reserve System established and then become the means of giving our central government absolute power over credit, interest rates, and the quantity and value of our money; and we have seen the Federal Government increasingly use this means and this power to take money from the pockets of the thrifty and put it in the hands of the thriftless, to expand bureaucracy, increase its huge debts and deficits, and to promote socialistic purposes of every kind.

We have seen the Federal Government increase its holdings of land by tens of millions of acres, and go into business, as a substitute for and in competition with private industry, to the extent that in many fields it is now the largest—and in every case the most inefficient—producer of goods and services in the nation. And we have seen it carry the socialistic control of agriculture to such extremes that the once vaunted independence of our farmers is now a vanished dream. We have seen a central government taking more and more control over public education, over communications, over transportation, over every detail of our daily lives.

And Our Republic Itself...

We have seen a central government promote the power of labor-union bosses, and in turn be supported by that power, until it has become entirely too much a government of and for one class, which is exactly what our Founding Fathers wanted most to prevent.

We have seen the firm periodicity of the tenure of public office terrifically weakened by the four terms as President of

Franklin D. Roosevelt, something which would justly have horrified and terrified the founders of our republic. It was the fact that, in Greece, the chief executive officers stayed in power for long periods, which did much to prevent the Greeks ever achieving a republic. In Rome it was the rise of the same tendency, under Marius and Sulla and Pompey, and as finally carried to its logical state of life-rule under Julius Caesar, which at last destroyed the republic even though its forms were left. And that, of course, is precisely one reason why the Communists and so many of their Liberal dupes wanted third and fourth terms for FDR. They knew they were thus helping to destroy the American republic.

We have seen both the Executive Department and the Supreme Court override and break down the clearly established rights of the states and state governments, of municipal governments, and of so many of those diffusers of power so carefully protected by the Constitution. Imagine, for instance, what James Madison would have thought of the Federal Government telling the city of Newburgh, New York, that it had no control over the abuse by the shiftless of its welfare handouts.

We have seen an utterly unbelievable increase in government by appointive officials and bureaucratic agencies—a development entirely contrary to the very concept of government expounded and materialized by our Constitution. And we have seen the effective checking and balancing of one department of our government by another department almost completely disappear.

Until We Are Now In Danger...

James Madison, in trying to give us a republic instead of a democracy, wrote that "the accumulation of all powers, legislative, executive, and judicial, in the same hands, whether of one, a few, or many, and whether hereditary, self-appointed, or elective, may justly be denounced as the very definition of

tyranny." The whole problem for the Liberal Establishment that runs our government today, and has been running it for many years regardless of the labels worn by successive administrations, has not been any divergence of beliefs or of purposes between the controlling elements of our executive, legislative, or judicial branches. For twenty years, despite the heroic efforts of men like Taft to stop the trend, these branches have been acting increasingly in complete accord, and obviously according to designs laid down for them by the schemers and plotters behind the scenes. And their only question has been as to how fast the whole tribe dared to go in advancing the grand design. We do not yet have a democracy simply because it takes a lot of time and infinite pressures to sweep the American people all of the way into so disastrous an abandonment of their governmental heritage.

In the Constitution of the American Republic there was a deliberate and very extensive and emphatic division of governmental power for the very purpose of preventing unbridled majority rule. In our Constitution governmental power is divided among three separate branches of the national government, three separate branches of State governments, and the peoples of the several States. And the governmental power, which is so divided, is sometimes exclusive, sometimes concurrent, sometimes limited, at all times specific, and sometimes reserved. Ours was truly, and purposely, a "mixed constitution."

Of Becoming A Democracy...

In a democracy there is a centralization of governmental power in a simple majority. And that, visibly, is the system of government which the enemies of our republic are seeking to impose on us today. Nor are we "drifting" into that system, as Harry Atwood said in 1933, and as many would still have us believe. We are being insidiously, conspiratorially, and *treasonously* led by deception, by bribery, by coercion, and by fear, to

destroy a republic that was the envy and model for all of the civilized world.

VII

FINALLY, let's look briefly at two or three important characteristics of our republic, and of our lives under the republic, which were unique in all history up to the present time.

First, our republic has offered the greatest opportunity and encouragement to *social democracy* the world has ever known. Just as the Greeks found that obedience to law made them free, so Americans found that social democracy flourished best in the absence of political democracy. And for sound reasons. For the safeguards to person and property afforded by a republic, the stable framework which it supplied for life and labor at *all* levels, and the resulting constant flux of individuals from one class into another, made caste impossible and snobbery a joke.

To Save True Social Democracy...

In the best days of our republic Americans were fiercely proud of the fact that rich and poor met on such equal terms in so many ways, and without the slightest trace of hostility. The whole thought expressed by Burns in his famous line, "a man's a man for a' that," has never been accepted more unquestioningly, nor lived up to more truly, than in America in those wonderful decades before the intellectual snobs and power-drunk bureaucrats of our recent years set out to make everybody theoretically equal (except to themselves) by legislation and coercion. And I can tell you this. When you begin to find that Jew and Gentile, White and Colored, rich and poor, scholar and laborer, are genuinely and almost universally friendly to one another again—instead of going through all the silly motions of a phony equality forced upon them by increasing political democracy—you can be sure that we have already made great strides in the restoration of our once glorious republic.

And for a very last thought, let me point out what seems to me to be something about the underlying principles of the American republic which really was new in the whole philosophy of government. In man's earlier history, and especially in the Asiatic civilizations, all authority rested in the king or the conqueror by virtue of sheer military power. The subjects of the king had absolutely no rights except those given them by the king. And such laws or constitutional provisions as did grow up were concessions wrested from the king or given by him out of his own supposedly ultimate authority. In more modern European states, where the complete military subjugation of one nation by another was not so normal, that ultimate authority of the ruler came to rest on the theory of the divine right of kings, or in some instances and to some extent on power specifically bestowed on rulers by a pope as the representative of divinity.

In the meantime the truly western current of thought, which had begun in Greece, was recurrently, intermittently, and haltingly gaining strength. It was that the people of any nation owed their rights to the government which they themselves had established and which owed its power ultimately to their consent. Just what rights any individual citizen had was properly determined by the government which all of the citizens had established, and those rights were subject to a great deal of variations in different times and places under different regimes. In other words, the rights of individuals were still changeable rights, derived from government, even though the power and authority and rights of the government were themselves derived from the total body of the people.

And Our "Unalienable Rights"...

Then both of these basic theories of government, the eastern and the western, were really amended for all time by certain principles enunciated in the American Declaration of Independence. Those principles became a part of the very foundation of our republic. And they said that man has certain *unalienable*

rights which do not derive from government at all. Under this theory not only the Sovereign Conqueror, but the Sovereign People, are restricted in their power and authority by man's natural rights, or by the divine rights of the individual man. And those certain unalienable and divine rights cannot be abrogated by the vote of a majority any more than they can by the decree of a conqueror. The idea that the vote of a people, no matter how nearly unanimous, makes or creates or determines what is right or just, becomes as absurd and unacceptable as the idea that right and justice are simply whatever a king says they are. Just as the early Greeks learned to try to have their rulers and themselves abide by the laws they had themselves established, so man has now been painfully learning that there are more permanent and lasting laws which cannot be changed by either sovereign kings or sovereign people, but which must be observed by both. And that government is merely a convenience, superimposed on Divine Commandments and on the natural laws that flow only from the Creator of man and man's universe.

Now that principle seems to me to be the most important addition to the theory of government in all history. And it has, as I said, at least tacitly been recognized as a foundation stone and cardinal tenet of the American republic. But of course any such idea that there are unchangeable limitations on the power of the people themselves is utterly foreign to the theory of a democracy, and even more impossible in the practices of one. And this principle may ultimately be by far the most significant of all the many differences between a republic and a democracy. For in time, under any government, without that principle slavery is inevitable, while with it slavery is impossible. And the American republic has been the first great example of that principle at work.

We Must Keep Our Republic...

In summary, I personally think that, as I said in the Blue

Book of The John Birch Society, democracy is a weapon of demagoguery and a perennial fraud. I think that a constitutional republic is the best of all forms of government man has yet devised. Our Founding Fathers thought so too, and the wisest Romans had already come to that same conclusion. So I am in excellent company. It is company which we hope more and more Americans will join. To that end we are saying everywhere we can, and asking all of you and tens of thousands to say with us: This is a Republic, not a Democracy. Let's keep it that way!

How many times have you gone to a bookstore—
or even two or three bookstores—
and failed to find the book you were looking for?

You'll save time, money, and postage by
ordering any book published in the United States
from

THE BOOKMAILER
The Complete Bookstore By Mail

We pay the postage anywhere in the world. We serve regular customers in all 50 states and in 109 foreign countries. Ninety-five percent of all orders filled by return mail. Your card enclosed in gift books. Write us for free lists of current books, with brief reviews.

THE BOOKMAILER
BOX 101 MURRAY HILL STATION
NEW YORK 16, NEW YORK

Our office is at
232 East 35th Street, New York 16, N. Y.

In Our Reprint Series

NINE MEN AGAINST AMERICA

by

ROSALIE M. GORDON

Single copies: One dollar each

Order from
THE BOOKMAILER, Box 101, Murray Hill Station
New York 16, New York

or from
POOR RICHARD'S BOOK SHOP
5403 Hollywood Boulevard, Los Angeles 27, California

or from
AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts

AMERICAN OPINION — SELECTED LIST

Reprints and Special Issues

Lane: **I Saw Poland Betrayed.**
Staff: **A World Gone Crazy.**
Gordon: **Nine Men Against America.**
Welch: **Life of John Birch.**
Burnham: **The Web of Subversion.**
Jordan: **From Major Jordan's Diaries.**
McCarthy: **America's Retreat From Victory.**
Flynn: **While You Slept.**
Fox: **The Pentagon Case.**
Garrett: **The People's Pottage.**
Willoughby: **Shanghai Conspiracy.**
Gutierrez: **The Tragedy of Bolivia.**
Petro: **The Kohler Strike.**
Matthews: **Odyssey Of A Fellow Traveler.**

Single copies, $1.00 each
Package price on any of the above, alone or in combination, 12 for $10.00

Regular Size, Monograph Numbers

Epstein:	**The Bang-Jensen Tragedy**	50¢
Oliver:	**Introduction To Contemporary History of Latin America**	50¢
Staff:	**One Hundred Steps To The Truth**	50¢
Welch:	**May God Forgive Us**	50¢

Quantity prices: 12-99, 40¢ each; 100-999, 35¢ each; 1000 or more, 30¢ each

Article Reprints

Title	1-99	100-999	1000 or over
Republics and Democracies	3 for $1.00	25¢	20¢
A Letter To Khrushchev	3 for $1.00	25¢	20¢
Through All The Days To Be	3 for $1.00	25¢	20¢
Why People Become Communists	20¢	15¢	12¢
A Fable From The (Hardly) Past	5¢	4½¢	4¢
A Letter To The South, On Segregation	10¢	8¢	7¢
This Is Where I Came In, Manion	5¢	4½¢	4¢
The Federal Reserve System, Sennholz	5¢	4½¢	4¢
The World Health Organization, Matthews	10¢	8¢	7¢
Report of Special Committee of Am. Bar Ass'n.	20¢	15¢	12¢

All prices include prepayment of postage. Order from
AMERICAN OPINION, Belmont 78, Massachusetts

THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY
INCORPORATED

Belmont, Massachusetts 02178

Bulletin For May, 1973
Approved by Executive Committee
© 1973 by The John Birch Society

FOREWORD

It's later than you think,
sooner than you thought!
An Observant Bircher

The above warning came to our MMM Department in San Marino from a member in the state of Washington. Its incisiveness in bringing out a point reminds your editor of an incident from his early-American youth.

The occasion was the first performance of a play being put on by the Sunday School classes of our country Baptist church. The hero was an eighteen-years-old stalwart of the local farm population, who had been picked for the role because his handsome physique made all the girls' hearts go pitapat, rather than because of any Thespian experience or ability.

At one melodramatic crisis in our play the villain drew a gun and, from across the stage, fired at our handsome hero. Throughout all of the rehearsals considerable realism was achieved in this action through noise and smoke provided by blank cartridges. And the hero was supposed to round out the full force of this realism by clapping his hand over his heart, pulling it away quickly, looking at it in surprised horror, and shouting: "My God, I'm shot!"

The very fact that such profanity from the original script was allowed to be used showed how important the good impresarios considered realism to be in this scene. And they were materially

aided in this purpose through the circumstance that the only lighting in the whole church in those days was by kerosene lamps. But nobody could get the hero to make his exclamation with the slightest degree of conviction in his voice. He was so obviously just going through motions and reciting lines devised by some distant playwright that the audience was sure to be moved to laughter rather than to fright and dismay. So when the night of the opening performance finally came, the desperate producer managed to slip a small paper envelope filled with tomato juice into the lapel pocket of our hero's jacket.

You can readily imagine the rest. When the time came and the pistol was fired, the hero clapped his hand over the pocket, pulled it away for his supposedly frightened stare, and the action went as follows: In a loud but listless tone and manner, "My God, I'm shot"; then immediately, in a louder and truly horror-laden exclamation, "My God, I *AM* Shot!" Which scared the audience half to death, even convinced the hero of how he ought to mouth that line, and made the play a huge success.

The analogy should be clear. Ever since 1958 members of The John Birch Society have been broadcasting a warning that there is a Conspiracy at work to make us a Communist country and merge us with other Communist countries under a one-world Communist tyranny. But their state of alarm has frequently not been sufficiently realistic and convincing, to their audiences or even to themselves.

Within the context of our Sunday School play it was strictly true that the hero had been shot. And it was important for his shout to make this clear. In the real life on today's worldwide stage it is true that a sinister, ruthless, and powerful Conspiracy is the central fact of the whole story. And the blood to prove it is not tomato juice, as a billion human beings could quickly show you – including some 349,500 of our own sons who were casualties in Vietnam.

What is more, since the *Insiders* decided that they were so near ultimate success as to be able to act more openly, the frightening effects and future significance of what is taking place are making a huge difference in the outlook of those who are reasonably informed. Mr. Nixon's politically ecumenical actions, and overtures to the Communist commissars all over the world, are proving tremendously popular with the vast body of American voters to whom they are intended to appeal. But to members of The John Birch Society, and some two million other patriotic Americans who have some idea of the score, the Nixon-Kissinger gymnastics have been quite revealing.

As recently as four years ago most of our converts to the "Conspiracy theory of history" were telling everybody who was polite enough to listen: "Say, do you know, there might be a Conspiracy at work behind some of the awful things that are happening all around us." Now these same good Birchers and others like them, on reading the headlines, are saying to themselves and shouting to the world: "Heaven help us, there really IS a Conspiracy behind all of this, and it really does mean to make slaves out of us all!" Which reaction, while terribly

belated, can still prove to be a powerful force in exposing and undoing the most foul combination of evil components within man's recorded history.

In line with this thought we have decided to take some of the news items which we digest each morning along with our grapefruit juice and translate them into honest language. We shall try to set forth the real background, effect, and intention of the developments described. Our chief interest will be to discover how contemporary actors and actions fit into the plans of the Conspiracy, and the gigantic deception on which those plans depend. In doing so, we may feel obliged to make some pretty strong statements – not because they are sensational, but despite that characteristic.

Day by day, therefore, throughout April, until either our space or our resolution gives out, we shall take one of the most significant headlines in each day's newspaper and try to make clear what we think the article below it really means. Our formula will not consist of "correction" but of "interpretation." And if it proves to have any merit we may apply it again in some future forewords.

Sunday, April 1, 1973. Nation Launches Meatless Week.

When told that the poor people suffered from lack of bread, Marie Antoinette was reported to have replied: "Let them eat cake." According to the libel, when spread years later than the hypothetical incident, this was supposed to have occurred soon after Marie, a bride of sixteen, had become the dauphine of France. As Nesta Webster has long since made convincingly clear, this was simply one of the lies, smears, and frame-ups perpetrated against the Queen, as a vital part of the strategy and the propaganda used by the conspirators to bring on the French Revolution.

A few weeks ago, however, an *Insider* of the contemporary Conspiracy, named Arthur Burns, made clever psychological use of this historic fraud. On being told that the American people were suffering from the high price of meat, he replied in effect: "Let them eat cheese." And on this occasion there was no doubt about the authenticity of the remark, because Dr. Burns allowed it to be given wide publicity at the time. He was obviously suggesting that this shortage of meat for ordinary citizens was due to high prices being caused by callous profiteers in the meat industry, and could be temporarily circumvented by the acceptance of a substitute.

At the same time, it seems to us, he was cunningly and sarcastically planting the idea, by his astute reminder of Marie Antoinette's supposed attitude, that these faults of the capitalistic system constituted sufficient grounds for a rising revolutionary mood among the American people. And if you think this is farfetched, it may be because you have not yet waked up to the cleverness of Dr. Arthur Burns; nor to how many tens of billions of dollars *your* government has been spending every year, mostly through HEW and OEO, to promote actual revolution and subversion here at home. So let us quote a famous historic epigram ourselves. Looking at this meat boycott as a specific illustration of the general

conspiratorial program to destroy the whole American production system, **we hold these truths to be self-evident.**

(1) There has been almost no real increase in the price of meat. Competition has still been sufficiently effective at policing prices – despite everything government has been able to do to reduce or even eliminate its force. The apparently higher prices have resulted almost entirely from the decreased value of the money which is now being used to pay for the meat.

To make this clear, just suppose that, through some convenient barter arrangement, you were accustomed to paying your butcher for his meat with woolen cloth which you produced. For ten pounds of meat of a certain cut and quality you have regularly been giving him ten yards of cloth. Then the government, by its arbitrary power, reduces all yardsticks to contain only eighteen inches. And you now pay for your ten pounds of meat with cloth measured by the new yardstick. It does not take the butcher many transactions to discover that he is being "took." So he now insists on twenty "yards" of the same cloth in exchange for his ten pounds of meat. But to say that the price of meat has gone up would be a ridiculous explanation of what has happened.

When the controlling *Insiders* within government find it necessary, by the total of raises within a few years, to double their own salaries, double postage rates, and double the cost of everything else done by government, it is criminally libelous for government to blame meat producers because it takes a great deal more of the same cheapened money to buy a given quantity of meat.

(2) This lowering of the value of our money is one hundred percent the fault of government. It has been caused entirely by dilution of the money and credit in use, through the removal of any gold backing or other intrinsic value whatsoever in our currency; through the continued printing of worthless paper as fiat money; and through the wild government spending, waste, giveaways, and borrowing which have appeared to make such dilution necessary. This *subversive* process has been carried on, tremendously further and faster, by the Nixon Administration, than by all previous Administrations combined since Franklin Roosevelt first devalued the dollar in 1934. We believe that it has been deliberate and intentional, for the very purpose of destroying the dollar, and thereby helping to accomplish many other Communist aims. To blame *any part* of the reduced purchasing power of our currency on the American business and professional men, or on the free-enterprise productive and commercial system, is a Big Lie of the most deceptive order.

(3) This meat boycott is anything but a spontaneous activity on the part of American housewives. It has been deliberately inspired by the Nixon Administration. It has been planned and organized by government bureaucrats, working through such "sudden" consumer groups as FIT (Fight Inflation Together) and BEEF (Better Eat Economic Foods), the very names of which suggest a combination of ignorance and demagoguery in unspecified proportions. The subtle hand of the government, and of all the Liberal press now supporting the Nixon deceptions, is obvious in these efforts:

(a) To have the public blame meat producers and distributors for the high prices; (b) to make the public believe that the government is looking out for its interests, and should be counted on to do so; (c) to make one more major push towards getting the American public accustomed to, and resigned to accepting, the shortages and scarcity and substitutes which are normal in the Communist economic system; (d) to prepare the way for real price controls and, eventually, rationing; (e) and to make "consumer protection" one more massive tool for fastening more and more tyrannical bureaucratic lines around the lives of the American people.

(4) The inevitable *result* of the boycott, of course, will be to help to create greater shortages, with still less meat at still higher prices. Throwing such monkey wrenches as this one into the production-and-distribution machinery cannot fail to have that effect. Just how on earth carrying around a sign, *Down With Food Prices*, can possibly have any ultimate effect except to *increase* food prices, is something which gullible housewives are not expected to understand – but which the planners for the Nixon Administration understand very well indeed. Some of these planners, in fact, are quite familiar with how *the same kind of innocent dupes* were beguiled into parading all over Paris with *the same kind of signs*, as a means of helping to bring on the horror of the French Revolution nearly two hundred years ago.

(5) Among other major revolutionary purposes to which this boycott will contribute are: (a) To speed up inflation; (b) to make Nixon more popular among the masses for having encouraged this boycott, supposedly to fight inflation; (c) to increase the power and size and reach of our central government; (d) to persuade the public that collective mob action can nullify economic laws; and (e), to drive a few more nails in the coffin being prepared for the American free-enterprise system.

[For more information on this general subject, read the reprinted article, *Food Prices*, by Alan Stang. Seven copies for one dollar.]

Monday, April 2. Thieu Arrives For Nixon Talks. Amid great fanfare, "President" Nguyen Van Thieu of South Vietnam arrived in Los Angeles, as an official and practically "royal" guest of our nation. His private plane carried the sign: "Cooperation In Peace." After a night's rest at the Century Plaza Hotel, Thieu was scheduled to hold "summit" conferences with President Nixon, at what the President calls his "House Of Peace," in San Clemente. And Mr. Nixon was being given a last-minute briefing for the great occasion by none other than Henry Kissinger. It was all an act, of course, as thoroughly phony as any playwright or public relations expert ever devised. To get the full flavor of the performance you should keep the following facts in mind.

(1) The kind of *peace* that "President" Thieu and his host are glorifying so insistently is the Communist version. As we have reminded our readers so many times before, the word *peace*, in this setting, does not mean the absence of war, but the absence of any resistance to Communism. And this form of peace, far more deadly than

any war, is now being bestowed on South Vietnam – and soon on all the rest of Indochina – by the policies of the Nixon Administration.

(2) Lt. General Nguyen Van Thieu began his climb to political greatness in Vietnam while he was serving as "Head of State," and his arch-rival, Air Vice Marshall Nguyen Cao Ky was serving as Premier. Both held their positions through appointment by a military group, under the leadership of Major General Duong Van Minh, which was running the country. This was in the 1964-1967 period, during the reign of American Ambassadors Henry Cabot Lodge and Maxwell D. Taylor. It is not certain that either of these astute operators fully realized what an incredibly useful pawn Thieu might become in the game being played by our government. But they did prefer him to Ky.

And so, in the first election under the new Constitution, in September of 1967, Thieu was able very skillfully to push Ky aside, and get himself elected President – while Ky, as his running mate, became Vice President. There were some outcries about the election being "rigged," but they did not exceed normal expectations for such occasions. Also, in the meantime, Ellsworth Bunker had succeeded Maxwell Taylor as the American Ambassador. From this point on Thieu rapidly became the favorite Vietnamese "anti-Communist" of Ambassador Bunker and all the other *pro-Communists* in our State Department.

(3) During the next four years, while the war was escalated to ten times its former size, it was the Thieu faction and the American representatives which always *appeared* to want to negotiate for peace; and the Ky faction which more honestly wanted to carry the war to North Vietnam and go ahead and win it. The whole tragic story of what our government insidiously allowed to happen – and actually caused to happen – to the pitiful people of South Vietnam constitutes one of the greatest crimes and betrayals of history. But that is beyond our purview here. What matters for our present purpose is that President Thieu followed the clever script for this deceptive performance at every stage. Also, by imperial decrees, martial law when needed, and brutal use of censorship and repression, Thieu made himself – always with Ellsworth Bunker's blessing – the absolute military dictator of South Vietnam.

(4) But the "democratic" forms had to be preserved, more for the political advantages of the Nixon Administration here at home than for any purely Vietnamese considerations. And so, in October, 1971, Nguyen Van Thieu was imposed for the second time on the people of South Vietnam as their "President." This was accomplished by agents of the Nixon Administration through an election so brutally and brazenly rigged as to make the typical elections in Soviet Russia look almost legitimate by comparison. Duong Van Minh, who had long been and still was the most personally popular general in South Vietnam, and Vice President Ky, who almost certainly could have won any honest election in a walk, both announced their candidacies. Later they both withdrew because of the obvious impossibility of having any such honest election at all.

For the same reason, nobody else could be persuaded even to run against Thieu. The situation became so embarrassing to the United States representatives that Ellsworth Bunker even personally pleaded with Ky to remain in the contest, but Ky refused to remain that self-destructive game. At the last minute the An Quang Buddhists (and please remember that about two thirds of the population of South Vietnam are Buddhists) joined practically every other organized opposition group in the country in favoring a boycott of the election. Nevertheless the election was held, as scheduled – just four days after Thieu had told the nation's police that they must shoot to kill if necessary to put a stop to growing "anti-government" demonstrations.

So Nguyen Van Thieu, running unopposed, got 94.3% of the vote cast by an 87.9% turnout of the qualified electorate (about seven million). And only 353,070 of these voters dared to cast blank ballots. This was on October 3, 1971. On October 8, Thieu's government confiscated the editions of twenty-two Saigon newspapers for either publishing specific articles he did not like, or failing to follow the new guidelines as to what he did like. On October 28, his government announced that it was setting free 618 Vietcong prisoners (thus to be turned loose, of course, on the civilian population) in honor of President Thieu's second inauguration, and would soon release 2,284 more. The inauguration was duly held in heavily guarded ceremonies on October 31. And President Nixon now had, for his Commissar in South Vietnam, as obsequious a puppet as Stalin ever had in Poland or East Germany.

(5) You may remember that in October, 1970 Vice-President Ky was not allowed even to enter the United States, because he was coming here to address a "March for Victory" rally. The Administration wanted no part of the psychology of *victory* being given any such boost either here or in South Vietnam. Ky was pressured into accepting instead the privilege of making a still unofficial visit to this country some six weeks later, amid as little fanfare as possible. While Nguyen Van Thieu is now being welcomed and glorified as a hero of *peace* – meaning *surrender*.

The betrayal of all the people of Vietnam, and of the whole of former French Indochina, into Communist hands, is now in the process of final consummation. It is being carried out amid and through such a welter of falsehoods, deception, cruelty and dishonor as to constitute a crime of enormous proportions. President Nixon, and his new Secretary of Defense, Elliott Richardson, with the guidance and advice of their Superstar, Henry Kissinger, are and will remain the chief architects of this policy and program until all of Southeast Asia is as surely and mercilessly ruled by the Communists as is Red China on its northern border. And Nguyen Van Thieu is visibly being built up at present to serve those purposes in a continuing major capacity.

Tuesday, April 3. High Court Rejects Alaska Pipeline Plan. This Supreme Court decision leaves in the hands of Congress any possibility of getting permits issued for construction of the pipeline, in which the oil companies are willing to invest over two billion dollars. And sets back the

beginning of such construction by several months, if not by several years. But the Nixon Administration's determination to bring about scarcity in this country, of everything from wheat to meat and from paper to petroleum, by all feasible means, is at the very core of its whole domestic policy. For you simply cannot have shortages, and rationing, and tyrannical controls by an ubiquitous bureaucracy, and all the other requirements for maintaining a Communist government over an enslaved people, when those people live in a land of plenty.

Contrary to all that the Marxist liars tell you, a bare subsistence standard of living *never* produces Communism; but Communism *always* produces a bare subsistence standard of living for the suffering masses. This is often by design as well as by sheer inefficiency, in order to make the masses easier to rule. Nobody knows that better than the ambitious *Insiders* who are striving so hard these days to bring us into a one-world Communist empire, with themselves sitting somewhere in the top echelons of the ruling hierarchy. And in our contemporary world the amount of gasoline available in any country has become almost the very mark and measure of the Americanist philosophy of abundance at work in that country as against the Communist philosophy of scarcity. Hence, *there must be no pipeline* to make available throughout the United States all of that oil in northern Alaska, even if the ecology argument is a pretty feeble excuse for not letting it be built. Also, having to buy our oil from foreign countries helps their economy and hurts ours, as is greatly to be desired!!

Wednesday, April 4. Ten Thousand Bus Protesters March Here. The "here" is Greater Boston, and this particular protest was against a Massachusetts Racial Balance Law dating back to 1965. But similar massive demonstrations against this same long continued manifestation of governmental tyranny, with our central or "federal" government as the usual guilty party, have now been commonplace all over the United States for many years. These ten thousand protesters, however, had none of the rabble-rousing mood about them. Serious, orderly, too deeply concerned for histrionics, these parents – mostly Caucasian but with an appreciable sprinkling among them of both Negro and Puerto Rican representatives – were determined simply to make unmistakably clear their unwavering opposition to "busing."

It is true that most of these people missed a very significant issue in the battle. The collectivist idiocy of having their children carted daily to some distant school, for the sake of some pretended expectation of thereby wiping out all racial distinctions in the next generation, or of thereby improving the educational receptivity of some minority group – this rationale for busing was not fully recognized by the protesting ten thousand as just one small tricky piece in a gigantic mosaic of Conspiracy. Nor was the insidiously destructive purpose of such a Conspiracy hardly recognized at all. But common sense, love for their children, and Americanist tradition all combined to stir these good citizens into palpable resistance against letting "Big Brother Government" replace the family. May their tribe increase!

Thursday, April 5. Heavy Fighting Near Saigon. Here we are, back again in Vietnam, or on the subject thereof. And you may not be that much interested in Vietnam. But you had better be. Because South Vietnam has the same kind of government that we do. Its Constitution was modeled after ours. Whether you realize it or not, South Vietnam right now is actually being governed by the same ultimate authority that we are – namely, the Nixon Administration. And after making full allowance for all the difference in background and circumstances, you cannot escape the fact that a great deal of what is now happening in Vietnam may be a preview of what will be happening here "sooner than you thought." Even though the projection may be hazy as to details. For the purpose *in both countries*, however smoothly disguised, is and will be the same: To reduce those countries to administrative provinces in a one-world Communist empire.

So let us follow up what we wrote under the April 2 deadline with a further look at the current scene in South Vietnam, while "President" Thieu continues his regal visit to other "heads of state" on other continents. Basically, the present situation in South Vietnam contains, among its sickening characteristics, the following components: (1) The Communists occupy, and hold by force, three-fifths of the area of the country; (2) they have over three hundred thousand armed troops in South Vietnam, to maintain this occupation, which troops – by the terms of the Paris agreement – are to be allowed to remain there; (3) the extent and rapidity of the movement of these armed troops, in harassing, attacking, and overrunning other areas, is to be controlled by a Joint Military Commission, which began operating on March 28, in accordance with the terms of the Paris agreement; and (4), this Commission consists of representatives of South Vietnam and the *Vietcong*, which not only glorifies these merciless murdering Communist guerrillas into the status of a recognized rival government, but constitutes in effect a "coalition" government of the Saigon regime with the Communists.

This form of incipient surrender has always proved fatal to any country that had such an arrangement imposed upon it. But all four of the above disgraceful features of the treaty are merely glaring examples of what President Nixon and "President" Thieu are now trying to sell the American people as "peace with honor." With the help, of course, of a pusillanimous press which is now almost as completely infiltrated and controlled by *Insiders* and Communists as is our Government itself. It is for this kind of "peace with honor" that nearly fifty thousand Americans, and hundreds of thousands of our South Vietnamese allies, have sacrificed their lives in a war against the Communists – a war which could have been won overwhelmingly in three months or less at any time, had Kennedy, Johnson, or Nixon allowed our military forces to do so.

But these examples make up only a formal beginning of the disgrace and horror which grow deeper every day. We have touched on them above only as background to the headline dated April 5: *Heavy Fighting Nears Saigon.* The UPI dispatch under that headline begins: "Heavy fighting moved stead-

ily closer to Saigon yesterday as Communist forces intensified their attacks in South Vietnam despite the cease-fire." A little further down we find that the Communists have committed nearly *ten thousand violations* (!) of the cease-fire since it became (supposedly) effective on January 28. In fact, besides the almost countless incidents of massacre, vandalism, and destruction being committed daily by the Vietcong guerrillas and North Vietnamese regular troops *which were already in South Vietnam.* Hanoi has been steadily pouring immense new consignments of troops and equipment into this subjugation of the country without even any noticeable pause.

We not only find Mr. Nixon's glorification of the "self-determination" he and Kissinger have provided for the people of Vietnam to be a deliberate falsehood of the most brazen variety, but we consider it such an insult to the intelligence of the American people as seems to delight Mr. Kissinger at every turn in his nefarious activities. And we wonder just what are the present thoughts of that Air Force Colonel who, after spending nearly eight years in a Communist prison in North Vietnam, was told by President Nixon on Febraury 12: "Your sacrifice has not been in vain." But if you have any doubt as to how any honest observer feels about this incredibly cruel betrayal of the pitiful South Vietnamese people, whom we had promised to protect from the Communists, try on the following item from the February 28 issue of the *London Daily Telegraph:*

Democratic Processes

The United States, says Dr. Kissinger, would not be opposed to a peaceful and democratic Communist takeover of Vietnam. "If the North Vietnamese are willing to compete peacefully, if they are willing to develop their country, if they are willing to rely on a political process, then we don't object to their objective."

So this is what the long war, with all of its suffering and destruction, has come to in the end. Where is the "domino theory" now? Where is the sacred mission of the United States to halt the further advance of Communism in South-East Asia?

The South Vietnamese will know what to think of the Communist peacefulness and democracy Kissinger talks of so glibly and heartlessly. They will know that the Communist political process is measured out not in peaceful, democratic forms but in the massacre of thousands and hundreds of thousands.

It is not only the South Vietnamese who should note Kissinger's cleverly calculated words. If the United States can acquiesce in a Communist conquest of Vietnam, why should it not acquiesce in Communist conquests elsewhere?

This is excellent commentary, as far as it goes. But both its premises and its conclusions fall far short of the whole horrible truth. We believe that even the most brief summarization of that truth will give a convincing and frightening answer to the final question in the *Daily Telegraph's* short article; will clarify the picture for those we are able to convince; *and will justify our giving so much of your time and ours to this subject.* So please bear with us a while longer if you can. We shall be making some strong statements, with no opportunity for documentation in the space available. But we believe that every one of the following observations can be proved by overwhelming evidence to be correct.

1. The Nixon Administration will not only "acquiesce" in Communist conquests elsewhere. It has been doing, and will continue to do, everything it can – as fast as it dares – to bring those conquests about. While preserving as long as possible, with cunning speciousness, the fiction that it is opposing Communism.

2. The Vietnam War, like the Korean War before it, was neither planned nor fought by the United States Government at any time or stage, for the purpose of turning back Communism, but just the opposite. The Vietnam War was designed and conducted at every stage so as to be of immense help to the Communists in both Southeast Asia and the United States itself.

3. To bring on and carry out such a war for such a purpose required: (a) That the U.S. Government maintain its pretense of combating Communism for idealistic and altruistic reasons; (b) that the U.S. Government, directly or indirectly, finance and equip our Communist enemies, so that they would be able to uphold their side of the conflict at the desired level; (c) that the United States Government conduct the war at all times in such a manner that every possible advantage was given to our enemies, and every conceivable disadvantage and restriction was placed on our military forces to keep them from going ahead and winning the war; (d) that every practicable form of internal dissension, restriction, and demoralization be imposed on the South Vietnamese to make certain that they remained always on the defensive, without ever having any chance of winning; and (e), that representatives of our government maintain complete control over the ruling authorities in South Vietnam at all times.

4. This incredibly tragic and evil farce, with the merciless suffering thus inflicted on the Vietnamese people, was made possible through an underlying circumstance of tremendous importance which we need to make more widely understood. The *Insiders* of the Great Conspiracy carry out the gigantic deception, on which so much of their progress depends, quite largely through the majestically simple ruse of gathering their greatest strength where it is least expected. In line with this strategy, for at least forty years the most powerful single force in the whole world for bringing about the advance of Communism has been the United States Government. So that any man whom the *Insiders* allow to head our government can get, and must give, vital cooperation between himself and any other highly placed pro-Communist teammate on any continent – even when they are going through all the motions of being enemies.

5. It is perfectly obvious that every President since, and including, Franklin D. Roosevelt, has been a willing party to this game, either because of the political advantages which it brought him or because he was himself

a trusted member of the conspiratorial team. It should be equally obvious by now that Richard Nixon is no exception. In fact, having played a brilliant right end for eight years on the Eisenhower squad, having been accepted into a high echelon of the Inner Circle at least by 1962, having spent years visiting Communist and crypto-Communist rulers or "statesmen" in other countries, and being in our opinion "the cleverest and slipperiest politician that ever showed up on the American scene," Richard Nixon came into the Presidency in January, 1969 far better qualified than any of his predecessors to help the *Insiders* strengthen their reach and power in every corner of the globe.

6. Also, Richard Nixon is more personally ambitious than any of his predecessors. In our often stated opinion, he wants to be the first ruler of the world. The one practicable chance of carrying out that intention within his lifetime is to bring all the nations of the earth, either by guile or by force, under a one-world Communist government. We believe Mr. Nixon is moving very rapidly towards that goal. Which brings us back to Vietnam, in case you thought we had forgotten.

7. For Vietnam has been a very successful operation in Mr. Nixon's scheme of things. That scheme includes establishing himself as the friend, benefactor, and eventually the recognized superior, of Communist satraps and would-be satraps everywhere, from Allende in Chile to Trudeau in Canada and from Ceausescu in Romania to Chou En-lai in Red China. And now that the *war* in Vietnam has served its purpose, the far worse *peace* in that area is to be the means of bringing all the way under Communist rule a whole series of nations for which Mr. Nixon will be able to claim full and personal credit. And whose viceroys, beginning with Thieu of South Vietnam itself, will look up to Richard Nixon as their patron, their protector, and their boss.

8. For the "domino theory" still abides. What naturally confused the writer for the *Daily Telegraph* was his assumption that the United States *did not want* one Asiatic nation after another to fall into Communist hands after South Vietnam had been pushed over. But under Mr. Nixon's control this is exactly what the *United States Government* does want to see happen, and what is going to happen. First Cambodia and Laos will be made new additions within the East Asia bloc of Communist nations. (After suffering the physical and spiritual devastation that always come to any country from letting the United States Government help it to "resist" Communism!) Then Thailand, Malaysia, and Singapore will fall in due and rapid course. While even North Vietnam is to be brought under the same Nixon umbrella and patronage by two and a half billion dollars of the American taxpayers' money.

9. But that is designed to be only the beginning of a sweeping conflagration. President Marcos of the Philippines has already said that if South Vietnam falls into Communist hands his country cannot survive. The Nixon Administration has been the primary force in undermining the anti-Communist government of Japan, installing as its Premier a pro-Communist named Tanaka, and giving Tanaka the immense prestige and advantage of enthusiastic American backing. And we certainly do not have to tell the readers of this bulletin the extent to which President Nixon has already made the present – *and future* – rulers of Red China the beneficiaries of his timely and tremendous support. From North Korea to Indonesia and from Burma to Japan the Communist power is now gaining and consolidating strength at a terrifying rate, *with Richard Nixon as its guiding star.*

10. In the meantime Mr. Nixon is maintaining his pro-Communist fences in Europe in excellent repair, and is about to start building some new ones in South America. Here at home he has done more in four years to communize our country than either Eugene Debs or Norman Thomas were able to do in a lifetime. We know that many of these activities seem to the American people as a whole, and even to our members, as of more urgent interest than unceasing Communist massacres in the Mekong Delta. But we do think you ought to be aware that the developments growing out of the Vietnam War are likely to become steadily more important to our future, rather than something which can now be regretted and forgotten.

We do not believe that five years from now the *Insiders* will have succeeded to the point that Richard Nixon, as President of a revamped United Nations, can be ordering one of his "peace-keeping" armies to suppress a rebellion of patriotic Conservatives in some part of the United States; and to do so with the same kind of murdering terror against civilians that was used by the UN "peace-keeping" force in Katanga, or that the Communists are using in South Vietnam right now.

But if this does take place, the armed force used for that purpose will almost certainly have been recruited from some of Mr. Nixon's Asiatic domains. The way to prevent this from ever happening is to bring enough patriotic Americans to understand that some such enforcement over the American people of the brutal power of a one-world Communist Government is already in the plans of the conspiratorial *Insiders.* So if we can persuade you to continue watching carefully the developments in Eastern Asia in the light of that possibility, our still giving this much attention to Vietnam will have been very much worth while.

Friday, April 6. Gray Withdraws FBI Bid. "President Nixon accepted yesterday a request by L. Patrick Gray that his nomination as director of the Federal Bureau of Investigation be withdrawn." Thus began the *New York Times News Service* article. And it was good news to any informed and patriotic American, of course. But the rejoicing is allayed by several considerations.

1. This article implied, and quoted President Nixon in support of the implication, that it was Gray's handling of the FBI in connection with the Watergate case which had aroused fatal opposition to his confirmation by the Senate. The President said that Mr. Gray had thus been exposed to "totally unfair innuendo and suspicion," which "thereby seriously tarnished his fine record as acting director." May we respectfully ask the President just what "fine record" he is talking about.

2. Mr. Gray became Acting Director of the FBI in May, 1972. We cannot prove, of course, that it was his deliberate intention to destroy the prestige, the reputation, the morale, and the future usefulness of that once great agency, or that he was assigned to the job for that purpose. But he certainly proceeded, from the beginning, as if that were the case. And the opposition to his confirmation as permanent Director of the FBI began to arise simultaneously, from many patriotic sources. His entanglement in the Watergate mess merely added many Liberals to that opposition, and thus was decisive in bringing about his withdrawal.

3. The selection of Patrick Gray to run the FBI had been typical of many Nixon appointments. His record as an Annapolis man, who had risen to the rank of Captain in the United States Navy, would be quite disarming to any casual observer. But during his last years in the naval service, Mr. Gray had become a high bureaucratic functionary of the very Liberal variety. He had also obtained a law degree and been admitted to the bar. On retiring from the Navy in 1960 he had joined a law firm in Washington which could hardly be called Conservative. He became a partner in that firm in 1967.

By this time Mr. Gray's visibly extreme leftward leanings had long since attracted the favorable attention of Richard Nixon. So in 1969, after Nixon became President, Mr. Gray began his climb up the civilian bureaucratic ladder by being appointed Executive Assistant to the Secretary of Health, Education and Welfare. And HEW, generally considered to be the most blatantly un-American of all government agencies, was notorious for its heavy financial support of revolutionary activities and of assorted subversive characters, including known Communists. Which is obviously why Mr. Nixon has arranged for HEW to have, next year, the largest appropriation of any government agency in American history, even going ahead of the Department of Defense by several billion dollars.

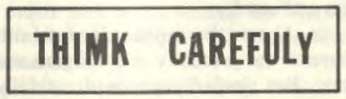
So Mr. Nixon knew his man, when he picked Captain Louis Patrick Gray, III, U.S.N. (Ret.), as his tool to do all possible damage to the great Federal Bureau of Investigation as rapidly as possible. This Mr. Gray did, primarily by brutally reversing every sound policy and custom which had been so carefully established by J. Edgar Hoover. And the *Insiders* got their money's worth by the irremediable harm he has done, and may still be able to do, as Acting Director of the FBI before he is finally and actually replaced by a permanent appointee.

4. And there is one other important reason why any rejoicing about this affair should be well tempered. Which is that William C. Sullivan might very well be appointed to Hoover's job, even though Hoover finally had the political courage to fire Sullivan out of the FBI altogether. (And, in our opinion, may well have signed his own death warrant in doing so, because it frightened the *Insiders* as to what Mr. Hoover might do next.) For the shifty Mr. Sullivan, despite having been incongruously out of place for years in the very solid FBI orgaization, still stands quite high in Mr. Nixon's book.

This was emphatically revealed, not long after he was dismissed from the FBI. Mr. Nixon, in his attempted cover-up of the Red Chinese role in the huge heroin traffic in our country, set up a new government agency whose most obvious function was to distort the figures and befuddle the public about this whole subject. William C. Sullivan was appointed head of that agency. So far as we know, he still is. And he could very easily be moved up to the head of what is left of the FBI. His name has been repeatedly suggested in the press. To most of the uninformed public it would seem splendid to have "an FBI career man" appointed to the job. But like many another typical Nixon appointment, it would be a tragedy for our country.

Sunday, April 22, 1973. No Break Seen At Wounded Knee.

As you can see, we have run out of permissible space for this diary-style feature before we got one-quarter through the month. But maybe we can improve the ratio the next time we try out this formula. It seems that we need to put up in front of us those cardboard admonitions which read like this:



and



We are most sorry not to have had room to comment on the disgrace to our officer corps and danger to our country of President Nixon's jumping a man like Alexander Haig, as a protégé of Henry Kissinger, over a couple of hundred superior officers to make him Vice Chief Of Staff. And we should have especially liked to expand on the New York City authorities having uncovered a huge ring for smuggling "hundreds of kilograms of heroin worth millions of dollars" into the United States from Mainland China by way of Hong Kong. Even though we do regard as an all-time anti-climax the following statement of one of those authorities: "I would recommend that the U.S. government," he said, "make aware to China that drugs leaving their shores are coming into the United States." This would undoubtedly come as quite a disturbing *surprise* to Chou En-lai in Peking, and to some of his highly placed friends in Washington, D.C.!!

But we must settle on merely mentioning, far too briefly, the treasonous activities and serious crimes of the leaders of the so-called American Indian Movement, as exemplified by their continuing "occupation" of the village of Wounded Knee, which belongs to the Oglala Sioux in the Pine Ridge Indian Reservation of South Dakota. For here we already have, right now, and right in the United States, an embryonic duplication of what is taking place in South Vietnam. Complete with the claim by murdering hoodlums, with long records as common criminals, *but who are now armed with Soviet guns*, that they represent a "provisional government," opposed to the established U.S. Government. They further demand that this status must be recognized, even to the extent of their being treated as "political prisoners" when captured.

These traitors and murderers have been heavily financed, and encour-

aged, by the very government that they are seeking to overthrow. But what is so different about that from the way our Communist enemies are being favored in Vietnam? It is also true that this "uprising," now four years old, is still on a small enough scale to make the pompous pretenses of its leaders look ridiculous – except to the loyal and law-abiding Oglala Indians whom the A.I.M. is trying to terrorize into submission and support. But there are some six hundred Indian Reservations in the United States – enough in theory to constitute a separate nation – and the aim of the A.I.M., *as openly encouraged by Soviet support and propaganda*, is very large indeed.

In fact, this whole subject is too large for us to deal with it properly here. So we are touching on it at all for two purposes. One is to tell you that the total background and current developments of this "insurrection" are covered quite thoroughly by Dr. Susan Huck in the May issue of *American Opinion*. And that reprints of her article, entitled *Renegades*, are already available at seven copies for one dollar. With the usual sliding scale for larger quantities. And we suggest that you get it widely read.

But the second reason is of a different nature. We want our members, at least, if not the public, to realize that one of the major accomplishments – that is, of the Society as a whole – is being highlighted by this rise to newsworthiness of the American Indian Movement.

For the pattern being followed is one of the oldest in the Communist book of strategy. In Algeria, for instance, Communist criminals like Ahmed Ben Bella pretended to believe that the native Arab, Mohammedan population was so mistreated and exploited by its French, Catholic rulers and settlers as to lack only leadership to plunge into a war for "liberation." Actually the harkis had been made full-fledged French citizens, a native Algerian was Vice President of the French Senate, and their standard of living was being steadily raised by French industrial and commercial leadership. The whole support for insurrection, and for the inevitable "provisional government" which was soon established, had to be built up through years of Communist terror inflicted by these agitators, not on the French settlers, but on the formerly peaceful natives. And it took all the dirty tactics of Charles de Gaulle, Henry Cabot Lodge, and John Kennedy to sell the Algerians into their present Communist slavery, through negotiations for their "independence" which were based on a fraudulent semblance of native revolt that had been created by unending Communist lies and cruelty.

In Algeria the supposedly fatal difference was primarily over religion and race. But similarily phoney, carefully contrived, and incredibly cruel "wars of liberation" have been based on differences in language, racial background, color, or other possible means of making a fomented civil war seem plausible. It was inevitable, therefore, that the Communists should use color as a difference out of which to create bitterness, hatred, and the foundation for a real or synthetic uprising by the American Negroes. And they certainly set out to do so.

At the time when the patriotic old

Alabama Negro, Perry Smaw, had his tongue ripped out and was further tortured to death, for speaking out against the Communist agitators, the movement to create a new, separate, Negro-ruled nation out of five southern states was well under way. Terrorization of the peaceful blacks into supporting, *or appearing to support*, the revolt; the soon-to-be-established provincial government; the eventual negotiations between the United States and the provisional government; and the final "independence" of a new nation ruled by Black Communists; all of these steps were to follow the Algerian pattern, with the same treasonous support from the *Insiders* in Washington that had been given to the Algerian Communists by Stalin's man in Paris named Charles de Gaulle.

The whole project was a "natural" for the Conspirators, with far more advantages on their side than there had been in a dozen areas of the world where the formula had been used successfully. But it never came off, and was visibly abandoned, in time, as a major step in converting the United States into a collection of Communist domains. Why?

Well, there were many reasons. They included the basic common sense and patriotism of a vast majority of the American Negroes, but that had been true of the harkis in Algeria. They also included the rapidly rising standard of living of the American Blacks, which was being helped and encouraged at every turn by most of the Whites (and prevented in every possible way by the Communists, for the sake of their revolution). But this also had been true in Algeria. They included many other similar problems to be overcome, which had not stopped the Communist murderers in Algeria. But there was one reason why the Communists failed and gave up on this project in America, which they did not face in Algeria. In that tragic victim of their lies, cruelty, treason and audacity there was no John Birch Society. And probably in no other activity has the Society so well earned at least the respect and perhaps the gratitude of its fellow Americans, both White and Black.

For it was The John Birch Society which, through its books, pamphlets, films, records, tapes, and speeches – especially the speeches by its able and patriotic Negro members – put insuperable obstacles in the path of this Communist program. We did so in part by specific counteraction to some Communist project, as in saving Americus, Georgia from the destruction Martin Luther King's hoodlums had boasted they were going to inflict upon it. Or, for a more extensive example, by exposing King himself so continuously and thoroughly, as a lying and vicious Communist agent, that he ceased to be of any value to the Conspiracy. (For the most concise yet fully documented treatise on that subject, our newer members should read Alan Stang's small masterpiece, *It's Very Simple*. Seventy-five cents per copy.)

But it was our tremendous, comprehensive, unceasing general educational campaign, far more extensive in this field than all the educational activities of all the other anti-Communist groups in America put together, which simply informed enough people soon enough, all over the United States, as to what the so-called "civil rights" movement

was all about; and as to the Communist hands and plans that were behind all of the propaganda, rioting, and crimes being carried out under that banner.

Without wanting to claim too much credit where so many other factors were involved, we really believe that it was this massive educational program on our part, running full force for about eight years, that tipped the scales against an acceleration or even continuation of this Communist project; and that helped mightily to restore sanity in the five southern states which were to have been the primary victims of all this national agitation and of the Communist provisional government that had been intended for them.

So now the *Insiders*, knowing that there was nothing wrong with their formula except when it ran up against this entirely new and particular form of opposition, are trying to use it in an area of far less potential, but to create as much turmoil and treason as possible through their American Indian Movement. Once again, we can stymie some of their specific efforts, as we did in Cass Lake, Minnesota, where – with the help of a lot of very patriotic Indians as well as other good citizens – our members fought these criminal revolutionaries into an ignominious defeat. But again our main effort must be to inform as much of the American public as we can, as rapidly as we can, concerning the background and real purposes of this completely pro-Communist project.

In this effort we shall have to overcome the brazen and aggressive support of A.I.M. by such agencies as the OEO and HEW; and by the press, because they are now masquerading as *political* traitors of ideological importance. But it can be done, as shown by our success in connection with the "civil rights" fraud. For in that fight too the pro-Communist agitators were fully supported by most, and actively financed by many, agencies of our central government in Washington – with the magnificent exception of the FBI. (J. Edgar Hoover boldly and publicly stated that Martin Luther King was the biggest liar in America.) So, to the best of our abilities, and on top of all our other jobs which simply have to be done, let's familiarize as much of the public as we can with the facts behind the American Indian Movement. With pride in our earlier achievement to encourage us.

AGENDA FOR THE MONTH – Permanent Projects

Once again, to save space, we shall list only those projects about which we have something to say. But once again we caution you against interpreting this as showing any loss of interest on our part in the projects we cannot mention.

I. RECRUITMENT

by Thomas N. Hill

We have frequently spoken about team recruiting as a very effective method for finding, reaching, informing and signing up prospective members. For instance, in the February, 1969 Bulletin we urged more of our members to form teams of two for carrying out recruiting activities. We further explained: "Then each member of the team reinforces the courage, ideas, judgment, determination, persistence, and persuasiveness of the other. This arrangement also leads to the formation and maintenance of more regular schedules for recruiting activities. And a hardworking and successful team has more occasion than does a single individual to take pride in its accomplishments."

As successful "team recruiters" will tell you, this activity requires that same indispensable willingness to get up, go out, and recruit. Of course everything we suggest or recommend does! Yet with team recruiting, the companionship is of significant value from many standpoints.

So once again, we recommend that with the assistance, guidance and direction of every Chapter Leader, with appropriate assists from all Section Leaders and Coordinators, members of every chapter start right away to form teams for the work we are about to suggest. For the effective recruiter who needs no teammate, we strongly recommend that he participate in this project as well. His experience can be of invaluable assistance to those less experienced recruiters.

Team recruiting is most successful when applied to follow-up efforts. As an example, those prospects who attend an educational film series, but who do not join after the final program, can be motivated to do so by a visit from two members of the chapter that sponsored the series. Those who receive our literature or attend our speeches are likewise excellent prospects for team recruiters. Readers of *None Dare Call It Conspiracy* certainly qualify as well. In other words, those who have had previous contact with us in some way, whether recently or in the past, are prime candidates for team recruiting.

We certainly do not rule out "cold calls." In fact, at no other time in the Society's history have the American people been more receptive to our views, positions and programs. Just the overwhelmingly favorable response to our materials and projects having to do with O.S.H.A., ERA, and the food price issue, proves this beyond all doubt. Team recruiting is a "natural" approach to people with whom we have had no contact in the past. We recommend, however, that a recruiting team first gain a little experience in the work with "known" prospects before taking on cold calls as a part of their routine efforts.

There are some very definite guidelines which should be observed by every recruiting team.

1. Be polite and courteous.
2. Try at the outset to determine the level of understanding of the prospect.
3. Adjust your approach in accordance with that level and remember that your initial goal is to create interest.
4. Be prepared to ask the prospect for his commitment to something – whether this be reading an article reprint, buying a book, subscribing to one of our magazines, attending an educational film series, or joining the Society. Again, the request will depend on the prospect's level of understanding.

5. Don't be afraid to talk, but take care not to monopolize the conversation. Recognize the prospect's concerns and interests and discuss them. Recommend material which is related in some way to those issues.

6. Make definite plans and arrangements for further visits.

You or your partner should have the following material on hand: Blue Book, magazine samples, current article reprints, subscription blanks, membership applications, and those brochures describing the Society and its leadership (*The Heartbeat of the Americanist Cause* and *Leadership Brochure*). A "Currently Most In Demand" catalogue will also be helpful. There are other items which, depending on your prior knowledge of the prospect, could be most helpful and timely. We further recommend that teams schedule a certain number of calls every week and that time be set aside at every chapter meeting for the purpose of reporting about the progress made and the experience gained.

Again, team recruiting will work if there is a will to work at it. And don't worry about not being well enough informed. Birchers know so much more about what is going on, and *why it is going on*, that there can be no comparisons made with the ordinary misinformed and uninformed American. If you don't think so, just ask yourself how few Americans remember that Mao Tse-tung, Ho Chi Minh, and Fidel Castro were all brought to power primarily through the help of the United States Government; or how many Americans today actually think Khrushchev was a humanitarian and that Richard Nixon is a Conservative!

II. THE HOMEMADE REVOLUTION

The common purpose of all the activities which we describe under this heading is destruction of some feature of the American economic and political organism. Right now the most flagrant example of this prospect at work is a vicious effort on the part of various Governors, most of whom – even if mislabeled as Conservative Republicans – are small-time *Insiders* trying to win their way into higher echelons of the Inner Circle. That effort consists of an attempt, usually by hiring recognized and ruthless pro-Communists as Commissioners (or whatever the title may be) for the penal systems of their respective states, to make a shambles of each such system. And to turn loose on the public hordes of dangerous convicts to make the crime wave even more dangerous and terrifying. Which follows a formula that has long been used by the Communists all over the world.

All we want to do about this subversive practice here, however, is to call your attention to a superb report on the subject, entitled *Behind Bars*, by Alan Stang, which appears in the May issue of *American Opinion*. Reprints will be available at seven for one dollar (with larger quantities on the appropriate sliding scale) by the time you receive this bulletin. And we urge you to spread them far and wide. If your state has not already been caught up in this vile and dangerous mess, you may even be able to prevent it.

III. THE UNITED NATIONS
–Get US out!

Last month we gave you a complete list, with pictures, of all the different signs available for Step 1 in the present great drive under this project. We now add one item to that repertory. It is a T-shirt (or, if you prefer, a sweat shirt), made out of the usual white materials, with

Get **US** out!
OF THE UNITED NATIONS

reproduced of an appropriate size in blue lettering across the front. At a recent outing of Birchers in the California Bay Area, one member showed up with quite a quantity of these shirts, and was completely sold out before the day was over. So we are glad to give you the following information about them.

The T-shirts come, for adult sizes, in *small, medium, large*, and *holy mackerel!* – pardon us, we mean *extra large*; for children all sizes are available from 2 through 18. The price of the shirts for adults is $3.00 each; for children, $2.25 each.

The sweat shirts come (available for adults with *short* sleeves only) in the same sizes as above, at $4.98 each; and (available for children with *long* sleeves only), in the same sizes as above, at $3.98 each.

Both items are available to our bookstore units at a wholesale discount of 30% to about 35%. The "fashion designer" of these glorious garments asks that applicable sales taxes be enclosed with orders; and that, on each retail order for a single item, 25¢ be added for handling cost. And all orders should be sent to:

Yosemite Silk Screening Co.
4 Yosemite Avenue
Oakland, California 94611

* * *

Also, for your work under Step 2, which is the strictly educational part of this *Get US out!* project, do not forget that a recording of the Los Angeles Dinner program – which was devoted entirely to the United Nations – is available on either cassettes or reel-to-reel at ten dollars each. The title for ordering is *The Real United Nations.* And that Ed Griffin's speech, *The Case Against The UN*, which runs for ninety minutes is available on cassette for $5.50 directly from American Media, P.O. Box 1365, Thousand Oaks, California 91360. They are both quite timely weapons at this stage of the battle.

IV. OPERATION BOOK SALES

None Dare Call It Conspiracy in the hardbound edition is quite an attractive volume. It is well printed, in large type on good paper, to meet all professional standards. We do not know what caused the long delay in shipment by Concord Press, which made our earlier announcement premature. But this book is now actually in stock, at both Belmont and San Marino, and will soon be available at most of our bookstore units. The price is $5.95 per copy, postage paid.

We should be glad to have all of the former orders reinstated, and to receive hundreds, or thousands, of new ones. For we believe that this hardbound NDCIC can do an excellent job of awakening some of your aquaintances who would not pay much attention to the pocketsize edition. Even those paperbound copies still pack a terrific wallop, however, as we have many occasions to observe. Recently we had a small group of young men in

uniform from Fort Devens, come into our combined bookstore-reception room here at headquarters. They browsed for an hour or more, and then bought a very considerable quantity of books and pamphlets about the Conspiracy. On being questioned they volunteered that this excursion to Belmont had been motivated entirely by their reading one copy of *None Dare Call It Conspiracy*, out of a sizable number which somebody had distributed free all over the camp.

These young men will wind up being members of the Society in due course. For we receive many letters these days from relatively new Birchers, who mention that they were first started on the road to membership by reading this small but frightening book. And we hope that the hardbound edition will now help us to increase its reach and impact. Because, the way money manipulations and manipulators are in the news today, NDCIC should be of more interest than ever before to anybody you can persuade to start reading it.

But we also wish to point out that *Teddy Bare*, dealing with Edward Kennedy's nightmare at Chappaquiddick, and *Richard Nixon*, dealing with The Man Behind The Mask, are especially timely and interesting books today in view of so much of the news that is in the headlines. They are both very effective at awakening the uninformed. So please remember that education is our business. We have accomplished a great deal with it. We intend to accomplish a great deal more. And the printed word is still our best educational tool.

VI. SUPPORT YOUR LOCAL POLICE – *And Keep Them Independent!*

One of our members in Arizona just got back from Israel, and said that the high point in her travels was seeing a SYLP bumper sticker on a catering service truck at the airport in Tel Aviv. But we had expected the astronauts to see one on the moon!

XI. YOUTH NEEDS TRUTH

In the April Bulletin we gave a list of our six Youth Camps for this summer, with all preliminary information about them. And we hope that at least a thousand of you teenagers and "young twenties," through attendance at one of these camps, will add a certain amount of factual learning, of deeper understanding about your inheritance, of inspiration for the future – and of sheer enjoyment of the occasion – to your happy memories.

XII. THE CONSPIRACY AT WORK

Almost all efforts of the Conspiracy today are devoted, directly, towards bringing about such piecemeal and partial mergers of nations, with corresponding surrenders of sovereignty and independence, as the very deceptively named Common Market, and deceptively planned Atlantic Union. These are intended as intermediate steps – exactly as suggested by Stalin – towards the ultimate totalitarian merger, by force where necessary, of all countries and peoples into one Communist empire called the United Nations.

It would take volumes even to

outline the crimes and the cruelties and the treason that are being committed for this purpose all over the world. But some very tiny signs and symbols of the movement are worth a passing mention.

(1) At this year's International Machine Tool Show in Chicago, where a 116-man team of Soviet Union engineers bought twenty million dollars worth of equipment – which of course they will never pay for, except with American taxpayers' money supplied them through one channel or another – the most attention-compelling exhibit was not a piece of machinery at all. It was a flag, displayed at the one Soviet booth. This was a *combination* flag, consisting of the American stars and stripes and the Soviet hammer and sickle merged together into one symbolic banner for the future.

(2) As is well known, the Soviets recently "purchased" from United States sources some two billion dollars worth of wheat, shiploads of which are already being delivered. And you can readily see how much the Nixon Administration arranged to have the Communists favored in this deal by one minor but strange offshoot of the affair which has come to light. A poultryman's association here in the United States, whose members are finding American grain too expensive to feed their chickens, has learned that the Soviets are willing to sell them sizable quantities of this wheat at prices which will enable them to pay for having the wheat shipped back to our country, reshipped to where it is most needed, and then sold to their farmer-members at prices cheaper than for the grain they might buy in the local markets. We do not know whether any such transaction has yet been consummated, but do know that dickering to arrange it has been taking place.

It would be easy to find a score of similar illustrations. And they all follow the brilliant concept of Danton, one of the originators of this Long Revolution, who gave his fellow conspirators 180 years ago this cunning advice: "*L'audace, plus de l'audace, toujours l'audace!*" We have referred to this historic admonition many times before, and it is worth referring to again. For audacity that the American people can only blink at in stupefied amazement is one of the keys to the whole policy of the Nixon-Kissinger Administration. And perhaps we had better have a little more audacity in pointing out, with regard to what is taking place, that a spade is a spade is a spade!

MORE TEMPORARY AGENDA

A. MOTOREDE
(Movement To Restore Decency)

Some of our MMM mail is complaining that the Society has not taken a more active part in the fight against liberalization of the laws, attitude, and practices with regard to abortion. And these members may be right. The John Birch Society took its position in this controversy, we believe, that abortion is simply murder, before even the first

formal proclamation to that effect was made by a body of Catholic Bishops. We certainly helped to get the Army authorities to back down from their decree that abortions could be performed in Army hospitals in violation of the laws of those states in which the hospitals were located. And many of our MOTOREDE Committees have been active and effective on the side of the angels against this satanic evil. But with so many important irons in the fire, all needing urgent attention, we probably have not done our full part in this important struggle.

Let us begin our reform, therefore, by listing four educational tools that we have available on this subject. (1) The first is a filmstrip, *License To Kill*, actually produced by one of our Coordinators. It runs thirty minutes, with sound available on either a record or reel-to-reel tape, and costs thirty dollars. And while a bit gory in spots, it is quite effective. (2) Next is Gary Allen's *Life And Death – The Little Murders Of Big Brother*; a sixteen-page reprint which sells retail at 7 copies for $1.00. (3) Third is a four-page flyer, containing the original MOTOREDE *Statement Concerning Abortion.* The price, in any quantity, is 50 for $1.00. And (4), last but certainly not least, is Dr. John Grady's excellent booklet, *Abortion – Yes Or No*, at 2 copies for $1.00. We steadily sell thousands of these booklets, as we have been doing for years. And we doubt if any other one man in America has done as much, or been as effective, in opposing the crime of abortion, as Dr. Grady.

So we now urge that more members use these tools more widely. And next month we hope to be able to go further in promoting organized effort on this important front. In the meantime, many thanks to all of you good MMM correspondents for reminding us.

E. THE EQUAL RIGHTS AMENDMENT

You may remember how, in the early days when this idiocy was being rapidly pushed through state legislatures with practically no opposition, all skeptics were being ridiculed for even suggesting that ERA might lead to women being drafted for actual combat duty in time of war. Such "reactionaries" were supposed to be seeing things under the bed, as usual. As a result of this deceptive Communist-style propaganda, which you can now expect on behalf of everything the Nixon Administration wants to slip over on the American people, many states ratified the Amendment without a majority of its legislators even knowing what they were doing.

But the Administration knew all right. Not only would the ERA *require* Congress to treat women exactly the same as men with regard to the draft, but a legal interpretation of the Amendment by the *Yale Law Journal* shows that: (a) "Women will serve in all kinds of units, and they will be eligible for combat duty"; and, (b), "neither the right to privacy nor any unique physical characteristics justifies different treatment of the sexes . . . ." What is even more important and more revealing, during these recent months, even while the opposition has been rising, the United States Navy – doubtless under Zumwalt's orders – has been busily and seriously working on the engineering problem of restructuring its ships so as to eliminate *all* differences between the treatment of men and women aboard, including all separate facilities *of any kind.*

The Naval Ship Systems Command issued in March a symposium of some forty pages, showing the problems to be taken care of as soon as the Amendment is finally passed (which they obviously expect it to be). These problems include both *ship design* and *regulations* which could provide for female members of a ship's crew to be berthed in the same quarters as men, and to use the same washrooms and toilet rooms that are used by male crew members. "This, I believe," states Senator Fong from Hawaii, "is indicative of the future if women are subjected to the draft." And if your editor may be permitted a parallel comment, it also shows the Communist plans and purposes at work in a now vast effort to reduce human beings to living at the same level as animals. This is because most animals are obviously so much easier to enslave and rule than are civilized men and women.

Fortunately, we have this monstrosity licked at the moment. We are very proud of the unusually decisive part our members have played in so rapidly changing the whole picture, after Mrs. Schlafly and Mrs. Davison and others had been laboring so valiantly for months, and with the great continued effort that they have put into the fight. We have kept up as much as we could with some of the specific battles, and should like very much to be able to thank most earnestly indeed our members in many states for such a grand job. But there are *too many* for this to be practicable (seventeen on our side at this writing), and too many members or even groups of members would be left unmentioned who also deserve great praise. Instead, therefore, let's allow Mr. Robert W. Lee of our Washington office to summarize this struggle at this stage. He writes as follows.

"Advocates of the Equal Rights Amendment appear to have given up all hope of achieving final ratification this year, and are instead gearing for another all-out effort next year. While the outlook at present appears highly encouraging, we must not fall into the trap of complacency. As one person put it, we must avoid playing hare to the Left's tortoise.

"Our efforts during coming months should be aimed at: (1) Convincing lawmakers in states which have not acted on the E.R.A. that they should reject it; (2) persuading legislators in states which have approved the measure to follow Nebraska's lead by rescinding their ratifications; and (3) encouraging lawmakers in states which have rejected the E.R.A. to stand absolutely firm in the face of Leftist pressures to which they will be subjected.

"At present, there is some legal controversy as to whether states which have approved the E.R.A. may rescind their ratifications. And eventual decision could be signifcantly influenced by the number of states which *are* on record as having rescinded their earlier ratifications. So we urge you to give special consideration to item (2) above."

N. NIX ON OSHA

by Wallis W. Wood

The National Federation of Independent Business recently reported

that the Occupational Safety and Health Act could cost the independent businesses of America more than sixteen billion dollars, based on fines levied thus far and the cost of complying with OSHA's edicts. Although most firms surveyed by the federation had not yet been inspected by an OSHA Compliance Officer, those that had been found the visit very costly. For example, fifty-seven percent of small manufacturers were cited for violations; the resulting fines and alterations averaged $11,987 per firm.

It is no wonder that thousands of businessmen are alarmed, upset, and even frightened by OSHA. As we predicted some months ago, they are beginning to realize that their firms, their freedoms, and their futures are now threatened by the federal government. As a result, many of them are responding very enthusiastically to our *Nix On OSHA* campaign. These businessmen are discovering that they must rely on us for the materials, the programs, and the organization that will be necessary if this bureaucratic monstrosity is to be stopped. Thanks in large part to their assistance and support, distribution of just one article in our educational arsenal, *Oshacrats* by Alan Stang, has passed the one-half million mark and is steadily increasing.

Needless to say, the Oshacrats do not care for this reaction at all. So on March 21 Congressman William A. Steiger of Wisconsin, one of the original co-sponsors of the Occupational Safety and Health Act, devoted a full page in the *Congressional Record* to an attack on Stang's article. (By a very curious coincidence, his remarks filled *precisely* one page in the *Record*, making it ideal for reproduction and distribution.)

Using a "fact-versus-fiction" format, Congressman Steiger cited nineteen alleged errors in *Oshacrats*. Alan Stang has carefully reviewed all nineteen of the Congressman's alleged "facts." He reports that every single one is inaccurate, misleading, or patently false. Alan's item-by-item reply to this attack will appear in a forthcoming issue of *The Review Of The News*. But in the meantime, we thought that every *Nix On OSHA* worker would be encouraged by this obvious indication that our efforts are causing such concern.

It is now time to step up these efforts even further, by launching a massive letter-writing campaign demanding that OSHA be repealed. We are aware that a few *Nix On OSHA* committees are already using local petitions and printed appeals to get this message across, and we do not want to discourage them one bit. However, we are convinced that personally written letters, addressed to specific individuals, will have far more impact than any "mass" approach.

So begin this campaign by asking every *Nix On OSHA* member to write his Congressman and Senators, urging them to help abolish OSHA. Send similar letters to local newspapers and other potential sources of support. Ask every businessman your committee has contacted to write similar letters – preferably on his firm's letterhead. And then use every means at your disposal, including even greater distribution of the materials already available, to reach other concerned Americans with the succinct and essential message: *Repeal OSHA*.

P. THE BIRCH LOG

by John McManus

Subscribers to this new weekly news column have already been located in five states. Requests for the four-page prospectus have been coming in steadily since the announcement was made in the April Bulletin. Many of these should result in additional subscribers in the weeks ahead.

A member in New York has reported that she took the prospectus to a local newspaper editor and suggested to him that he carry the column. The editor read the folder from cover to cover, including the three sample columns, and immediately signed up as a subscriber. And a Coordinator in a southern state wrote us about a subscriber he had just obtained: "This man has had no prior contact with the Society. I went in cold and used the Blue Book, *The Heartbeat Of The Americanist Cause*, and *This Is The John Birch Society* as door openers. He was impressed with their quality and also the quality of *The Birch Log*. He wants to develop a 'balanced' editorial page and this fills the bill for the conservative side. More to come soon, I hope!"

Camera-ready copy is sent weekly to all subscribers for the nominal charge of thirteen dollars per quarter. We suggest that, while weekly newspapers will be the most logical customers, they need not be the only carriers of this column. In fact, we already have one daily newspaper as a subscriber. In addition to regular weekly and daily newspapers, there should be a good deal of interest from college and school papers, trade journals, and other publications. We leave it to you good members and your ingenuity to be very effective sales agents for us, in order to utilize this very effective (we hope and believe) addition to our educational campaign.

No salesman can be successful without an order blank, however, and a knowledge of his product. To supply both with this bulletin would take us over the postage weight line and thus cost thousands of dollars. "Your editor" even counts the words in everybody's copy! (Including his own!) Please simply write, therefore, for the prospectus of *The Birch Log*. And with your help this column will soon have scores of subscribers, and then hundreds, and then .... Ulp, Goodbye!

Z. PENDING LEGISLATION

by Bob Lee

A combination of thanks and congratulations is in order for the members who followed through on last month's request for telegrams to members of the House of Representatives, opposing the Atlantic Union Resolution.

On April 9, as expected, the House Rules Committee approved the Atlantic Union Resolution, but the House rejected the rule on the Resolution the following day by a vote of 210 to 197. This action by the House may well have killed the Resolution for this session of Congress. Conceivably, the Rules Committee could grant it another rule, but the Committee does not usually give second chances during a session to rejected legislation.

Your efforts, combined with those of other organizations and individuals active in the fight against Atlantic Union, helped greatly to achieve a very worthwhile and important victory.

GENERAL AND MISCELLANEOUS COMMENTS

Most members who used their MMM forms for March have now received their two copies of Ed Griffin's *This Is The John Birch Society.* All other members will please take note that it is now available again from Belmont or San Marino or the bookstores at one dollar per copy. For we think that this already excellent introduction to the Society was improved by the addition of a few pages of pictures; and that it can be most helpful for recruitment and many other purposes.

The MMM bonus book for April, *Rendezvous At Katyn*, by Foster Furcolo, is now going out as rapidly as our Belmont shipping room can handle it on top of all the other current demands. And this book too is now in stock for regular purchase at two dollars per copy. Your editor, regretfully, simply has not yet been able to read it. But those who have done so are quite enthusiastic about its quality, both as a novel and as an informal report on one of history's most infamous crimes.

Your MMM bonus book for May will be (surprise) John Noble's *I Was A Slave In Russia.* We are sure that there are a great many members who, like ourselves, never having read this once famous and very moving book, would still like to do so. Consequently, we bought up, at a bargain price, all the remaining stock of the publisher – not only for use as an MMM bonus, but for regular sale at $1.50 per copy as long as the few thousand extra copies last.

We also call to your attention that, having enough weight margin within the postage limit for this May Bulletin, we have inserted one of the larger MMM forms which we used for many years. As we shall do again from time to time when the weight will permit. Because ever so subtly (you know, like a sledgehammer), this larger form carries a constant reminder that contributions through the MMM envelopes are neither against the law, unscriptural, nor even unwelcome.

Let us hasten to explain that MMM forms *without contributions* are entirely welcome too. The total of comments, ideas, criticisms, suggestions, orchids, brickbats, and entreaties which reach us through those envelopes are very helpful to us; and we certainly hope that our replies are sometimes helpful to you. But inflation and taxes are driving us crazy too (you probably wondered what was doing it), so we are making sure that all pipelines for revenue are kept well lighted at the entrance and in good working order.

* * *

Our cupidity, however, had nothing to do with the erroneous price that was announced on our *Not One Red Cent!* postcards. This grew out of an egregious mistake on the part of one of our printers in quoting us our costs for the card. And under time pressure, with the April Bulletin ready to roll, we quoted our own sale price on that basis. Fortunately, the printers themselves discovered their error on rechecking various cost figures about a week later. So practically all orders were actually shipped by us at our immediately revised price of 20 cards for $1.00. (Of which the labor cost of handling orders is a prime ingredient.

The sliding scale is: 100-999 cards, four cents each; 1,000 or more cards, three cents each.)

Also, we hope that this corrected price will be of appreciable help in getting you good people to put a million or more of these cards in circulation. For we do think they can be quite effective towards keeping our government from paying two and one-half billion dollars, in what would be considered "reparations," to the Hanoi Communist regime. "Not One Red Cent!" is certainly the right answer to that perfidious proposal.

* * *

We are glad to comply with a request from Col. Bunker and Mrs. McKinney by announcing that the *New England Rally For God, Family And Country* will take place this year at the Statler Hilton Hotel in Boston as usual. The dates are Saturday, June 30 through Wednesday, July 4, inclusive; with a "preview" reception on Friday night, June 29. Among the speakers, including several new stars this year, will be Dr. John L. Grady, Mrs. Phyllis Schlafly, Mr. Otto Otepka, Dr. Bob Jones, and Mr. Thomas J. Anderson. And the July 4 Dinner on Wednesday night will be in honor of Dr. Jones. If further information is desired you should write to: The New England Rally, 265 Walnut Street, Dedham, Massachusetts 02026.

* * *

Also, we are delighted to make the following announcement on behalf of Mrs. LaRita Quinn. She, and our Colorado chapters under her leadership in this endeavor, are sponsoring a similar gathering this year under the title: *The John Birch Society Speaks at the Rocky Mountain Rally.* (Mrs. Quinn explains that "this is strictly a Birch Bash, with proceeds – if any – going to Belmont.") It will be held on Saturday, July 7 and Sunday, July 8, at the Holiday Inn in Pueblo, Colorado. And among the featured speakers will be Mr. Charles Smith, Mr. Alan Stang, Mr. John F. McManus, the Hon. John G. Schmitz, and Father Francis E. Fenton. For further information, or tickets, you should write to Mrs. LaRita Quinn, RR1, Box 76, Beulah, Colorado 81023 – or telephone 303-485-3209.

* * *

Finally, in this happy procession, we must mention the annual Dinner in Arizona, in honor of the birthday of John Morrison Birch. It will be held this year on Saturday, May 26, at the Del Webb's Townehouse, 100 W. Clarendon, in Phoenix. The featured speaker for this occasion will be the Hon. John G. Schmitz (whom we seem to have heard of somewhere before). The "social hour" will be at 6:30 P.M.; dinner at 7:30 P.M. Reservations, on a "first come, first served" basis will be at the price of ten dollars per person. Checks should be made out to *John Birch Day Dinner*, and mailed to Mrs. Seymour Weisman, 88 W. Myrtle, Phoenix, Arizona 85021.

* * *

With regard to our own official COUNCIL Dinner at the McCormick Inn, 23rd and the Lake, Chicago, Illinois 60016, on Saturday, June 9, at a price of eighteen dollars per person, for which reservations – if not placed with your Coordinator – should be sent to Mr. John McManus in our Belmont office, we are not going to say a word! For three reasons: (1) It is already obvious that the Dinner is

going to be oversold, without any further help from us being needed; (2) we told you all we know about it, in the April Bulletin; and (3), all of this talk about dinners is making your editor hungry, and we simply cannot stop right now for anything to eat. So let's change the subject! (But we'll see you in Chicago!)

* * *

So let's take the Watergate scandal as our new subject. Many readers have probably been wondering why we have said nothing about it. Perhaps our best comment now, therefore, can be an explanation of why we have made no comment before.

(1) The situation has been changing rapidly, from day to day. Even what we have said about Patrick Gray and the FBI in this bulletin is already out of date before we can go to print.

(2) President Nixon has been doing so many worse things, far more dangerous to our country, than are involved in the Watergate mess, that we had rather turn our attention on his aid to our Communist enemies, or treasonous activities against the United States, than on this spying by his aides against the Democrats.

(3) We seriously doubt that the President knew anything about the affair *in advance*. This is because Nixon must have known (as even we did, and so stated) that he had the election completely "in the bag" before these cloak-and-dagger antics ever began. So that running any such dangerous risk to his reputation, and possibly to his career, was inordinately stupid. And *stupid* Nixon is not! Never, period.

(4) Anything we had to say about the developments would necessarily have been based largely on what the President was saying at each stage of the opening abyss. While neither his remarks nor his actions ever had the slightest relation to the facts or the truth. As we and many others have sadly pointed out many times before, there is no informed person anywhere, friend or foe, who would really take the word of Richard Nixon for anything on earth. So we ourselves would have been writing in the dark.

(5) This whole episode has blossomed out with such deadly precision, and in such an inexorable manner, to do Nixon the greatest possible damage, that it is hard to ignore the possibility of the melodrama having been plotted, and carried out brilliantly at the proper speed for greatest effect, by spies among the spies. But it is only a possibility which we are certainly in no position to explore.

So let's change the subject again. It is not our job, or our wish, to help to crucify Richard Nixon. It is our task to try to keep him and his fellow *Insiders*, of any Party or no Party, from destroying the independence of the United States and the freedom of its people. In fact we'd be willing to forgive Nixon for his *ex post facto* responsibility in the whole Watergate bucket of eels if he would take diplomatic recognition or quasi-recognition or de facto recognition, or whatever it is, away from his Chinese Communist friends before they ever even cross the Pacific. Because their being on American soil with diplomatic immunity is far more dangerous to the United States than all of the amateurish sleuthing performances at the Watergate.

And we hope we do not need to add, after so many harsh paragraphs in these pages, any further illustrations of how rapidly the Nixon Administration has kept the whole program of the Conspiracy plunging ahead. (Of course the Watergate wrangle may slow down the action a bit temporarily – but who knows?) What we do need to point out, however, even for our own members, is the significant extent to which we are now in the game. The Federal Reserve Board finds it necessary – or desirable – to defend itself, through one of its top men, against the charges set forth in *None Dare Call It Conspiracy*. The very author of the Congressional Act which created OSHA now fills a page in the Congressional Record with all kinds of distortions and falsehoods to try to offset some of the doubts and opposition being created by Alan Stang's article on the *Oshacrats*. And there is no doubt about the part our members played in getting the Atlantic Union Resolution defeated by the House, after it had already been passed by the Senate.

The United Nations crowd, and especially UNICEF, goes to great trouble to defend itself from all of the exposures in our literature. We could go on at considerable length, and quite convincingly we believe, about our role in the continuing battle over gun controls, the Genocide Treaty, drugs, and other targets on which our magazines, books, films, filmstrips, speakers, and plain hardworking members have all been concentrating. But what happened to ERA within four months after we got into the fight is our prize exhibit at the moment. And we now make one exception to our rule about praising our participants in the ERA battles, simply because what happened in Wisconsin belongs in a different category, and has such impressive significance.

For ERA was ratified by both houses of the Wisconsin legislature last year. But its proponents, apparently seeing that ERA might begin faltering on the national scene, decided to nail down Wisconsin's position by putting through an amendment to the *state* constitution. So they arranged to get a referendum to that effect on the ballot for an election to be held April 3. Five weeks before that date our members, led by Jay and Laurene Conner, started organizing a statewide ad hoc committee to oppose it. And we wish we had room to tell you of all the work that was done, literature that was distributed, and excellent steps that were taken.

It will have to suffice, however, for us to tell you that: (1) The ad hoc committee, called POW (Protect Our Women), never hid its Birch beginnings, so both it and the Society were heavily smeared by much of the press during the last two weeks before the election; (2) other patriotic groups participated actively in the campaign, but most of the literature, leadership, and labor were supplied by the Birchers; (3) the *Milwaukee Journal* reported, correctly, that "when the legislature voted to place a Wisconsin Equal Rights Amendment (ERA) on the ballot for the April 3 election, approval by the voters appeared to be a breeze"; (4) what happened in Wisconsin was supposed to become a guide for the ERA proponents who were planning similar constitutional amendments in other states, so there was plenty of Liberal pressure behind

ERA in this campaign; (5) the Governor of the State, its two Senators, both houses of the legislature, virtually all major Wisconsin newspapers, television stations, and radio stations, and most state organizations supported the amendment; (6) but the people of Wisconsin voted NO, by approximately 483,000 to 420,000 – with over 90% of all the counties voting the same way.

You can readily imagine, therefore, the exultation with which our Coordinator began his long and detailed report on this massive effort with the following sentence: *WE WON! WE WON! WE WON! Yesterday ERA; tomorrow OSHA; next month the UN; and early next year the Master Conspiracy!* We hate to dampen such enthusiasm by even whispering to him that his timing is a bit on the optimistic side. But one extremely important point stood out at the end of this whole experience like an enormous light. The American people are still incredibly uninformed and unaware about what is taking place. *But when the truth gets to them, as it did in Wisconsin on this issue, they still know what is right and also what to do.* Which is something quite encouraging for us all to keep in mind.

And we pause to remark . . .

For the benefit of many parents. We recently overheard some revealing conversation. "How on earth," asked the first young man, "did you acquire such a good education?" "It was fairly easy," replied the second young man. "I didn't go to college."

For the benefit of a recent recruit. This new member sent her Chapter Leader the following resignation: "After much reflection and prayer, I have decided that God does not want me to do anything but church work, so I would like to be dismembered, please." Okay, my dear. But we are sorry to lose you and it really does seem a tough way to go!

While for those holy people, and others even less so, who wish to remain wholly with us, we also have a message. We cannot begin to tell you, even by repeating it so often, how deeply we appreciate all of your support, and labor, and dedication. But once again we thank you just as earnestly as we can. And also once again, as always, to every faithful member, I send my affectionate regards.

Sincerely,

Robert Welch

Get US out!

The John Birch Society Bulletin – is distributed by first class mail on or about the first day of every month. Five dollars of each member's annual dues is allocated to pay for a subscription. The rate to non-members, in the United States and Canada, is also five dollars per year; in all other countries, by airmail, twelve dollars per year. Individual copies may be purchased at all American Opinion bookstores for fifty cents each; or by mail, at two copies for one dollar. Bulk purchases may be made by mail, postpaid, at the following prices: 2 to 9 copies, 50¢ each; 10 to 99 copies, 40¢ each; 100 to 999 copies, 35¢ each; 1000 or more copies, 30¢ each. (Except sixteen-page bulletins at one-half the above prices.) Mail orders should be sent to either: American Opinion, Belmont, Massachusetts 02178; or American Opinion, 2627 Mission Street, San Marino, California 91108.

Lt. Gen. P. A. del Valle
41 Cornhill Street
Annapolis, Md.

18 June, 1962.

Dear Mr. Heinsohn:

The enclosures are self explanatory. They are being sent to a selected group of patriots, among whom we include you.

The Defenders of the American Constitution believe this is the life and death struggle of the Republic, and we implore you to join in it with us. We can cut down this piece of treason before it gets headway if we can get just one state to act. Whatever you can do to get the pressure built up locally and nationally on the state governments will pay dividends in freedom.

Yours for God and Country,

P.A.del Valle
Pres.D.A.C.

Tulsa, Okla. Sept. 19th. 1961.

Mr. A.G.Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textile Nills.
Sevierville, Tenn.

Dear Pal in DISREPUTE:-

May I say "WELCOME TO THE FOLD,"You are to be congratulated whether you know it or not. The enclosed copy of a letter to Robert Welch will explain some of the details, and I am sure that after you weigh the facts as they are, that you will realize just how important you are becoming. This letter with the comments is a blessing in disguise and more deadly than an ATOMIC BOMB if you will only capitalize on it. It can be one of the finest pieces of amunition that money would not buy. Rest assured that I speak from over thirty years experience.

I note that your name appears in the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY brochure, as a member of the COUNCIL, and you should be proud that you rank in that group, but the price that you will pay is going to be high. It so happens that I speak with "THE VOICE OF EXPERIENCE". I have been through the wringer and am thankful that I was not liquidated to still my voice. The facts are that I have been told that such is the case. For some unexplainable reason, I have always had a faculty of getting on the inside and having information fall in my lap. Just why this is so I do not profess to know.

Like yourself, for many years I was the sole owner of a successful business and manufactured merchandise that sold all over the world wher Oil was produced. I had a feeling of being a substantial business man and my judgment was respected even by some Bankers, but I felt I had a fortune to share, for I had spent many years researching into Religions and history of people and their governments. This included our own Constitutional Form of Government. Being able to understand 8th. Grade English I found many things in our CONSTITUTION that were being ignored and the meanings distorted to suit opportunist. The facts were that I had a bump of curiosity to find out what the influence was that did the conniving and I found that it always could be traced back to that 1896 meet of HERZL and his 204 Elders of Zion.

I conceived the idea of putting on a Broadcast to awaken the sleeping Public. I paid for the time on the air out of my own pocket. I wrote the script, always being sure that I could authenticate every statement. I did this for the protection of the Station and myself. While the range of the station was small, I managed to build up a loyal and appreciative audience. I started in very moderate by fully explaining how and why the Constitution had been conceived and why the safeguard were incorporated, and after a few months I began to explain how the inroads were developing and what the result would be. The facts are that I eventually opened up the vitrol. The fight came along for "ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT, Oklahoma was one of the states that was in the hopper. Our Legislature had approved the proposition and put it on the ballot for a vote of the people to amend the Constitution. I teamed up with Senator Price (State Senator) and we devoted about two months to the campaign against it. As a result it was defeated and hell was to pay and the ANTI DEFAMATION LEAGUE and the Zionist issued orders to "GET OLD MAN BURT AT ANY PRICE,HE KNOWS TOO MUCH." They tried to get me put off the air, but the Station manager told them that as long

as I could pay for the time and authenticate my statements, that the timw was mine. The manager called me in and informed me what he had told the gang and told me who the gang was, then he added, Burt, we are 1500% behind you, give them hell.

Things rocked along several months, and one day the sky fell in on me, for they had manipulated around through the International Banking gang and had me wrecked by cutting of my supply of material that was vital. While I made connections for an other source of supply, they began boreing into that source like a termite and it took less tham two years to have them wreck that supplier and my business also. They put me out on my uppers, but in spite of that I have managed to exist, although they cramped my style and made it impossible for me to spend the money so badly needed to carry on the fight, I have managed to spend my time researching into history and by keeping busy, I have not had the time to sit down and weep or sympathize with myself. Of course I am still a S.O.B., BASTARD, and a ANTI*SEMITE, plus many other titles too numarous to mention, but each one is a battle strip that I am proud of. It is quite possible that the shortage od rich food at time may have prolonged the battle, but it has never caused the loss of a shot when I have been within range of a target.

As I look over the list of the John Birch Society, let me sgy that I am not afraid to be found dead in the company of any of them for I am sure we are fighting for the same cause. I do believe that there is a great degree of difference in our understanding of what the enemy really is and how serious the whole thing has become. It is no place for a coward or novice in my books.

Rest assured that you and any other person that has his name on that Brocgure is branded by te enemy. The big cry that went up from every corner of the nation against the Society was a healthy sign and the space that was devoted in the Congressional Record was of value. The enemy is bound to be against you, and the damn fool that rises up and spouts off with the enemies line is brainwashed to the point that his brain has been thrown out in the rinse. Make a point to never become angry for losing your temper at a fool is a waste of energy, and no one thinks well when mad. Keep a cool head and out-think the enemy by getting him mad and calling names. Learn to laugh at them and feed them rumors that keeps them perplexed.

Make every-day a HEYDAY by stirring the animals. If I have written any thing to Welch that you would like to have clarified, rest assured that I can do it and tell you where to look to authenticate it. Let's not become ANTI-HEBREW JEWISH for they are as dumb as others can be, but this Asiatic Jew that was a Hioong-noo heathen that had his prepuce clipped as a part of a ritualistic hocus-pocus. I believe that I can secure you a photo-copy of a letter from Ben Gurion's office, also from the Jewish Council in New York that confirms that there is no such thing as a SEMITE or SEMITIC. You just can't be ANTI-SOMERHING THAT AINT,

Keep up the good work and remember that there is no place to quit once we start for a fool is born every minute and the seemingly don't die.

Sincerely yours,

L.G.Burt

L.G.Burt. Route 10, Tulsa, Okla.

Tulsa, Okla. Sept.18th. 1961.

Mr. Robert Welch.
The John Birch Society, Inc.
Belmont 78, Massachusetts.

Dear Mr. Welch:-

The Brochure at hand with other material regarding the John Birch Society and I want to thank you for the same although I am not elgible to become a member. You see, I having been in the fight against COMMUNISM for over 30 years have been cussed and discussed from stem to stern and branded as an ANTI*SEMITE so long that I would feel that something was missing if I should loose any degree of the title. One thing sure, my effectivness would have vanished with the loss of the title.

I am quite sure that it is a sign of asininity for any one to get an idea that they can fight Communism out in the open and not be branded withe the meaningless smear title. An individual or group becomes automatically smeared the instant that they become effective. Since there is no race of people that can honestly class themselves as SEMITES, SHEMITES, or SEMITIC and exclude all others, therefore the word is meaningless except as a smear word and only through ignorance on the part of any one does it have value as a smear. Any one that knows the facts can soon discover that it is a valuable title because it indicates that the individual or group is effective.

Over the past several months, I have received many calls regarding the merits of the Society and whom to contact to join. It so happens that I am quite well informed about the details of your organization, havinf read every word that has been published in the Congressional Record and having been in contact with several members by mail and phone, or personal contact, thus I have been able to do you some good.

Since I am 77 years young and past the age of being a joiner with false delusions, I am willing to help the younger individual get into action which is much needed to save the world from the enemy. In my estimation your plan of organization is ideal and bound to be effective. I believe that particular stress should be put on each unit becoming a study club with each member becoming fully informed in every detail as to how, when and where Communism made it's start and exactly how and where it works with it's many fronts, for Moscow and Kruschev is only one front out of a hundred. New ones pop up every day and they bore in like termites and lay an egg to hatch into an active unit of operation just as you will find them in the Tulsa Y.M.C.A. under the guise of BROTHERHOOD, or in the National Council of Churches and scores of other places too numerous to mention.

This is no panty-waist scrap for an ignoramus that has to run home and ask ma or his wife what to do next. One has to become a leader and be willing to stand alone and ready to fight to the finish without any thought of surrender. You and your members are out in the open, but the enemy is well intrenched and they know exactly where they plan to go next. Their ROAD-MAP and TIME-TABLE has all been a matter of record since 1896, or over 65 years. You and every member of the John Birch Society should secure a copy. If you will do this and then take it apart to discover where we were then and compare it with the events that have taken place in history over the 65 years, you will discover where you are in 1961.

#2. Robert Welch.

You will discover just why they shout ANTI-SEMITIC when you become a bit potent. You will discover things that you have never had an inkling about, for it discloses just why your Banker, Publisher and Broadcasting Networks as they do when it comes to news, finances and every other thing that goes to make up life in a free country.

The ROAD MAP I refer to is"ThePROTOCOLS OF THE LEARNED ELDERS OF ZION." Regardless of what any one may claim, Theodor Herzl and his 204 self chosen and self styled ELDERS OF ZION wrote the ticket for the thing we call Communism today and they distorted the term ZIONISM into a POLITICAL meaning entirely foreign to it's concept in the beginning. This statement can be proven by compareing any Encyclopaedia Britannica previous to the 12th. edition to the modern versions, for the Britannica has come in for it's share of revising, book-burning and other distortions in late years under the guidance of the enemy.

Secure a copy of the PROTOCOLS, read and re-read. Analyze each of the 24 PROTOCOLS, section by section,of which there are 292 and you will discover exactly how, when and where COMMUNISM has made it's inroads into WORLD HISTORY for 65 years. Trace the philosophy back to it's beginning if you can. Read between the lines just as you would analyze a financial statement and you will discover that this fight is no place for a bare-foot boy, and I have a feeling you were not fully shod when you made the decision to enter the battle. Let me say from experience that this gang can cause you to lose your pants and shirt. You see, I did not waste time looking for my trousers, but I made it a point to discover that the culprits were not SEMITES, but instead, they were Zionist of the modern type and were not Hebrew Jews and of ASIATIC ORIGIN and heathens that had been circumcized in in 740 A.D. and turned into JEWS by the KHAZAR KING BULAN and this removal of a little fore-skin has given them a license to pose as JEWS under Talmudic direction ever since. Since the Unabridged Dictionary defines a JEW as being of HEBREW ORIGIN, a blind man should be able to discover that they are not JEWS.

The Khazars can be traced back through authentic history to 2200 B.C. where they were known as the Hioong-noo savage tribe that roamed the plains of Northern Asia, and it was their savagery along with other tribes that they mongrelized with that was the real cause of the Chinese Wall being built across China, These wild tribes eventually forced their way to West Asia and fought and mongrelized with the Hunnic-Finnic Tribes of Mongols and shortly after the beginning of the Christian Era they forced their way across the Ural Mountains to settle in in what became known as the Chozar or Khazar Kingdom. These barbarians had no moral or spiritual code, neither did they have an alphabet or a written language. They adopted the Hebrew Alphabet to their polyglot lingo , snipped their fore-skins and became SEMITES, so they now claim.

"THE SUNFLOWER" editors mote that appears on page six of the brochure is a fair example of naivete qualifications that seemingly guide the John Birch Society as a whole. Read the PROTOCOLS and see if you can figure out just how this gang has gained control of the PRESS if it has not been through the SCHOOLS OF JOURNALISM. Find a single one in America if you can where the faculty is not dominated by the enemy of a FREE PRESS. Any one should have observed this. The same rule applies to every financial institution in America today.

#3. Robert Welch.

Sooner or later you will discover that your name on any Board of Directors of a Business Institution is a liability to that organization if they are dependent on financing in any manner where the International Banking Gang has a finger in the pie, and this applies to the Federal Reserve, which was their brainchild that dates back to 1770. It is just as much a part of the 1896 scheme as was the creation of Israel at the end of World War II. You may rest assured that every individual that has his name on the Council and as endorsers of your Society will be paying the price in the future. The enemy has eyes to see and ears to hear and you better believe that they never do any sleeping.

Let's go back to that "EDITOR'S NOTE", most certain if you will review that statement, " A STUDENT THAT GAVE HIS NAME AS'THOMAS' GOODWIN', BUSINESS SENIOR, and WHO WAS QUOTED AS ALLEGING THAT THE.. ANTI-SEMITISM THAT CHARACTERIZES SOME OF THEIR LITERATURE,CONDEMNS THE ENTIRE GROUP etc." Just how dumb do you suppose those editors take you to be. Wichita University is listed as having 5,364 students. Most certain the Seniors are all known to the REPORTERS and you can rest assured that "JACK ROBINS" of the SUNFLOWER STAFF knows that the statement made is a hoax, Surely you are not that dumb. I suggest that you delegate one of your Wichita Chapter to go to the bottom of this for there is a"nigger"in this woodpile and it will be a good idea to set the pile on fire to smoke him out. Reporters of that school of Journalism are not that dumb. Check the records and you will find a KHAZAR ZIONIST AT THE HELM, just as we have them in Oklahoma Universities. A Communist is like a skunk, he leaves his tracks behing and any one that disturbs them gets"stunk up"and the odor is identical.

Nail their tail to the barn door with their head down and you will have cured the varmit's ability to smear with lies or any other method. Remember that their toes are always on the front end of their foot and they are clumsy when backing up, but like the editors of the SUNFLOWER,they'LL back out of their hole if you are stupid enough to believe their story.

The "NATIONAL PROGRAM LETTER" on page 8 is exceptionally good. Keep the Chapters small where individuality has an opportunity to grow and express itself. Keep you membership secret and arm each one of the members with the facts. Have them ## equipped with the Road-map of Communism as it is furnished by the PROTOCOLS, and at all times refrain from the mob spirit, go armed with the truth and it will make you strong and free, which is an AMERICAN HERITAGE if we only preserve it.

Only when the enemy shouts"ANTI-SEMITIC" are you making progress. To learn this has cost me my fortune and security in my old age, but you and the world may rest assured that I am only beginning to fight. Even Ben Gurion and the the American Council for Judaism admit that no such a thing as SEMITIC EXISTS and have sais so by letter. When there "aint"any such animal, how can one be an ANTI-SEMITE?

There is no end to the history that I can quote on this subject and authenticate every statement. Arm yourslf with the truth and then have the courage to share it with the world and the enemy will vanish.

Sincerely yours.

Route 10, Tulsa, Okla.

L.G.Burt.

Tulsa, Okla. 10/1st. 1961.

Mr. A.G.Heinsohn,Jr.
Sevierville, Tenn.

Dear Friend Heinsohn:-

Many thanks for the kind word in your letter of the 25th. After having been in the fight for over 30 years, I have a feeling that I have a faint understanding of the problems and it is no place for a weakling. I am sure that my judgment is not all bad, nor do I believe that I am more optimistic than conditions warrant. Of course my World is small since I do not travel as I once did, but I have many contacts that cover the country generally. The report that I get is,"THERE IS A GENERAL AWAKENING". I am sure that the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY has has an important part. The Howl that went up was a healthy sign. It came from every corner of the nation, and the enemy is running scared. As I stated in my former letter, THE PLAN OF ORGANIZATION IS IDEAL, but I do question whether Welch is fully qualified to lay down rules to govern every detail. The ANTI-SEMITE HASSLE should never have taken place if the leaders had known all the facts, for there is no such thing in captivity as a SEMITE, Shemite or any thing to become ANTI to. There was a SEMITIC LANGUAGE, but the Arabs supposedly descended from Ishmael, the illegitimate son of Abraham and Hagar, an Egyptian handmaid of Sarai or Sarah, that live to be 90 yeers of age before God got around to make her fruitful to produce Isaac.Since the seed of Abraham supposedly was handed down from SHEM through 10 or 12 generations of direct lineage, and Abraham could only furnish half of the seed that both Isaac and Ishmael could inherit, it can be seen that if any promiscuous interloper got mixed up in the family lineage the claims of any of them might be well watered out. Of cour se such events don't leak out in good society, that do happen. I long ago learned to takes such claims with a grain of salty reservation.

Remember this one point. The Textile Products are distributed very generally by the element that claim to be JEWS. Finances of the entire world are under their domination. My suggestion is to know the enemy and outsmart them by beating them to the punch. I have no way of knowing how your Organization is constructed as far as the control lies, but be sure that the enemy does not start boreing into control. for I am sure you are marked for destruction.

If your Stock is open to purchase at any point, they will find an opening just like a Termite takes to wood. If you have followed the Wall Street Journal over the past two years, the story of the Endicott-Johnson Shoe Company to retain ownership and managment was only one of the recent scraps to oust the managment. I have been watching this thing for many years and have seen dozens of such take overs. Watch the one that is going on with Montgomery-Ward right at this time and observe the names that pop up from time to time until the International Banking gang of outlaws has taken over. When Avery retired from Wards they took over.

Here in Tulsa and Oklahoma this gang has taken over a great part of the Oil Industry in recent years.. I have watched the steps over months and years and know how they put people out of business. It is no laughing matter.

#2. Heinsohn.

You may rest assured that I am not an alarmist, but I have made a study of the operations of this gang and they are ruthless in their methods of operation. I have had first hand experience but I made it a point to find out how it was done after it was too late to save my own business or security in my old age. If I can save others the same experience, it is my way of leaving the world better than I found it. In my case they wrecked an other firm to get me. Rest assured that I have never ceased giving the enemy a rough time.

You may have access to the enclosed paper. The chances are that you gave it little thought if you have seen it, but Freedman is a Jew of Hebrew origin and is one of the best students of History in America. He has an interesting background and is a millionair in his own right and is devoting his whole time to exposing Communism. You can depend upon his statements. I suggest that you read this paper through and weigh it against the things you know by having seem them evolve.

This is explosive material and should not be left laying around where people that might have no desire to understand facts might get hold of it. You will note that the map is taken from the Jewish Encyclopedia and ties in with authentic records that can be traced back to 2,200 B.C. This paper carries only a part of the story but I have it in continuity and most of it retained in my memory with dates. It can be see that after 30 years of research on the subject of Communism, I should have a store of information that can't be picked up in a week. The great problem confronting the "Johnny-come-lately" group is the fact that so many sources of information have been brainwashed by the deletion of facts. The enemy are experts at this.

It might be well if you would send me your home address so I can reach you in the privacy of your home. There is some information that I might forward to you that it would be better if it did not go through a Business Office. Regardless of how well you may think information is guarded, my experience has been, that leaks often take place where least expected. I know that is is the case in the offices of the enemy. Some of the most potent information I have received in the past has come unexpectedly and without solicitation on my part. A clue develops and if followed up, it often results in a chain of information that unlocks a lot of doors. The great factor is to get to know the enemy and how they operate. The main problem is to not become conceited to the point that one assumes that he has the gang outsmarted. When one gets to be an expert, it is a sign of decay by dry-rot.

Read this paper with care, for it opens a door that few people know exists. It will give you an insight into the manner in which Communism has evolved out of a race of mongrelized heathens, that have latched onto a racial heritage, which they use as a front of respectability that has been badly distorted through Religious teachings that have been distorted through the ages and do not conform to natural law or common sense.

Never mix your Religious Philosophies with the fight against Communism, Zionism and Communism is POLITICAL and without a moral or Spiritual Code of any kind. It is BARBARIAN in every degree. Most of us have had a moral and spiritual code that unfits us for the fight in the rough and tumble style that is essential to win.

#3. Heinsohn,Jr.

There is one thing that we all have to learn in this fight. We all have to be tolerant of the methods that are used by others in this fight. Always keep the guns trained on the enemy and never take apot-shots at any one that is fighting with a pea-shooter. Too many that get into the scrap try to use 16" ammunition with a sling-shot. It is a waste of energy. Discover for yourself how Communism evolved out of the past centuries. Be sure that any statement that you make is based upon facts and then shoot both barrels. When you get the kick-back of name-calling and become branded with the title of Anti-Semitic, you'll know that you hit a crow, for that howl that the John Birch Society stirred up disclosed that crow-feathers were in the air.

As I stated that I was not elgible to become a member. I am not the only one, for I know of dozens that have been branded over the years. They will be found fighting shoulder to shoulder with any one that is in the fight. When your name was placed on that Council List, you were a marked individual as far as the enemy is concerned. Leave your Company and your Religion out of the scrap for in the eyes of the enemy, Gentiles have no soul and are cattle. Jesus was the illegitimate son of Pandira, a Roman Soldier, and we have no souls in the eyes of God. Let them think what they please as long as we don't accept the idea on our part.

I hope you will excuse me for writing such a lengthy letter, but the discussion of Communism has no terminal facilities if one is versed in the subject. With best wishes, I remain.

Sincerely Yours.

L.G.Burt

L.G.Burt.
Route 10.
Tulsa, Okla.

Lt. Gen. P. A. del Valle
41 Cornhill Street
Annapolis, Md.

18 June, 1962.

Dear Mr. Heinsohn:

The enclosures are self explanatory. They are being sent to a selected group of patriots, among whom we include you.

The Defenders of the American Constitution believe this is the life and death struggle of the Republic, and we implore you to join in it with us. We can cut down this piece of treason before it gets headway if we can get just one state to act. Whatever you can do to get the pressure built up locally and nationally on the state governments will pay dividends in freedom.

Yours for God and Country,

P.A.del Valle
Pres.D.A.C.

Tulsa, Okla. Sept. 19th. 1961.

Mr. A.G.Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textile Nills.
Sevierville, Tenn.

Dear Pal in DISREPUTE:-

May I say "WELCOME TO THE FOLD,"You are to be congratulated whether you know it or not. The enclosed copy of a letter to Robert Welch will explain some of the details, and I am sure that after you weigh the facts as they are, that you will realize just how important you are becoming. This letter with the comments is a blessing in disguise and more deadly than an ATOMIC BOMB if you will only capitalize on it. It can be one of the finest pieces of amunition that money would not buy. Rest assured that I speak from over thirty years experience.

I note that your name appears in the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY brochure, as a member of the COUNCIL, and you should be proud that you rank in that group, but the price that you will pay is going to be high. It so happens that I speak with "THE VOICE OF EXPERIENCE". I have been through the wringer and am thankful that I was not liquidated to still my voice. The facts are that I have been told that such is the case. For some unexplainable reason, I have always had a faculty of getting on the inside and having information fall in my lap. Just why this is so I do not profess to know.

Like yourself, for many years I was the sole owner of a successful business and manufactured merchandise that sold all over the world wher Oil was produced. I had a feeling of being a substantial business man and my judgment was respected even by some Bankers, but I felt I had a fortune to share, for I had spent many years researching into Religions and history of people and their governments. This included our own Constitutional Form of Government. Being able to understand 8th. Grade English I found many things in our CONSTITUTION that were being ignored and the meanings distorted to suit opportunist. The facts were that I had a bump of curiosity to find out what the influence was that did the conniving and I found that it always could be traced back to that 1896 meet of HERZL and his 204 Elders of Zion.

I conceived the idea of putting on a Broadcast to awaken the sleeping Public. I paid for the time on the air out of my own pocket. I wrote the script, always being sure that I could authenticate every statement. I did this for the protection of the Station and myself. While the range of the station was small, I managed to build up a loyal and appreciative audience. I started in very moderate by fully explaining how and why the Constitution had been conceived and why the safeguard were incorporated, and after a few months I began to explain how the inroads were developing and what the result would be. The facts are that I eventually opened up the vitrol. The fight came along for "ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT, Oklahoma was one of the states that was in the hopper. Our Legislature had approved the proposition and put it on the ballot for a vote of the people to amend the Constitution. I teamed up with Senator Price (State Senator) and we devoted about two months to the campaign against it. As a result it was defeated and hell was to pay and the ANTI DEFAMATION LEAGUE and the Zionist issued orders to "GET OLD MAN BURT AT ANY PRICE,HE KNOWS TOO MUCH." They tried to get me put off the air, but the Station manager told them that as long

as I could pay for the time and authenticate my statements, that the timw was mine. The manager called me in and informed me what he had told the gang and told me who the gang was, then he added, Burt, we are 1500% behind you, give them hell.

Things rocked along several months, and one day the sky fell in on me, for they had manipulated around through the International Banking gang and had me wrecked by cutting of my supply of material that was vital. While I made connections for an other source of supply, they began boreing into that source like a termite and it took less tham two years to have them wreck that supplier and my business also. They put me out on my uppers, but in spite of that I have managed to exist, although they cramped my style and made it impossible for me to spend the money so badly needed to carry on the fight, I have managed to spend my time researching into history and by keeping busy, I have not had the time to sit down and weep or sympathize with myself. Of course I am still a S.O.B., BASTARD, and a ANTI*SEMITE, plus many other titles too numarous to mention, but each one is a battle strip that I am proud of. It is quite possible that the shortage od rich food at time may have prolonged the battle, but it has never caused the loss of a shot when I have been within range of a target.

As I look over the list of the John Birch Society, let me sgy that I am not afraid to be found dead in the company of any of them for I am sure we are fighting for the same cause. I do believe that there is a great degree of difference in our understanding of what the enemy really is and how serious the whole thing has become. It is no place for a coward or novice in my books.

Rest assured that you and any other person that has his name on that Brocgure is branded by te enemy. The big cry that went up from every corner of the nation against the Society was a healthy sign and the space that was devoted in the Congressional Record was of value. The enemy is bound to be against you, and the damn fool that rises up and spouts off with the enemies line is brainwashed to the point that his brain has been thrown out in the rinse. Make a point to never become angry for losing your temper at a fool is a waste of energy, and no one thinks well when mad. Keep a cool head and out-think the enemy by getting him mad and calling names. Learn to laugh at them and feed them rumors that keeps them perplexed.

Make every-day a HEYDAY by stirring the animals. If I have written any thing to Welch that you would like to have clarified, rest assured that I can do it and tell you where to look to authenticate it. Let's not become ANTI-HEBREW JEWISH for they are as dumb as others can be, but this Asiatic Jew that was a Hioong-noo heathen that had his prepuce clipped as a part of a ritualistic hocus-pocus. I believe that I can secure you a photo-copy of a letter from Ben Gurion's office, also from the Jewish Council in New York that confirms that there is no such thing as a SEMITE or SEMITIC. You just can't be ANTI-SOMERHING THAT AINT,

Keep up the good work and remember that there is no place to quit once we start for a fool is born every minute and the seemingly don't die.

Sincerely yours,

L.G.Burt

L.G.Burt. Route 10, Tulsa, Okla.

Tulsa, Okla. Sept.18th. 1961.

Mr. Robert Welch.
The John Birch Society, Inc.
Belmont 78, Massachusetts.

Dear Mr. Welch:-

The Brochure at hand with other material regarding the John Birch Society and I want to thank you for the same although I am not elgible to become a member. You see, I having been in the fight against COMMUNISM for over 30 years have been cussed and discussed from stem to stern and branded as an ANTI*SEMITE so long that I would feel that something was missing if I should loose any degree of the title. One thing sure, my effectivness would have vanished with the loss of the title.

I am quite sure that it is a sign of asininity for any one to get an idea that they can fight Communism out in the open and not be branded withe the meaningless smear title. An individual or group becomes automatically smeared the instant that they become effective. Since there is no race of people that can honestly class themselves as SEMITES, SHEMITES, or SEMITIC and exclude all others, therefore the word is meaningless except as a smear word and only through ignorance on the part of any one does it have value as a smear. Any one that knows the facts can soon discover that it is a valuable title because it indicates that the individual or group is effective.

Over the past several months, I have received many calls regarding the merits of the Society and whom to contact to join. It so happens that I am quite well informed about the details of your organization, havinf read every word that has been published in the Congressional Record and having been in contact with several members by mail and phone, or personal contact, thus I have been able to do you some good.

Since I am 77 years young and past the age of being a joiner with false delusions, I am willing to help the younger individual get into action which is much needed to save the world from the enemy. In my estimation your plan of organization is ideal and bound to be effective. I believe that particular stress should be put on each unit becoming a study club with each member becoming fully informed in every detail as to how, when and where Communism made it's start and exactly how and where it works with it's many fronts, for Moscow and Kruschev is only one front out of a hundred. New ones pop up every day and they bore in like termites and lay an egg to hatch into an active unit of operation just as you will find them in the Tulsa Y.M.C.A. under the guise of BROTHERHOOD, or in the National Council of Churches and scores of other places too numerous to mention.

This is no panty-waist scrap for an ignoramus that has to run home and ask ma or his wife what to do next. One has to become a leader and be willing to stand alone and ready to fight to the finish without any thought of surrender. You and your members are out in the open, but the enemy is well intrenched and they know exactly where they plan to go next. Their ROAD-MAP and TIME-TABLE has all been a matter of record since 1896, or over 65 years. You and every member of the John Birch Society should secure a copy. If you will do this and then take it apart to discover where we were then and compare it with the events that have taken place in history over the 65 years, you will discover where you are in 1961.

#2. Robert Welch.

You will discover just why they shout ANTI-SEMITIC when you become a bit potent. You will discover things that you have never had an inkling about, for it discloses just why your Banker, Publisher and Broadcasting Networks as they do when it comes to news, finances and every other thing that goes to make up life in a free country.

The ROAD MAP I refer to is"ThePROTOCOLS OF THE LEARNED ELDERS OF ZION." Regardless of what any one may claim, Theodor Herzl and his 204 self chosen and self styled ELDERS OF ZION wrote the ticket for the thing we call Communism today and they distorted the term ZIONISM into a POLITICAL meaning entirely foreign to it's concept in the beginning. This statement can be proven by compareing any Encyclopaedia Britannica previous to the 12th. edition to the modern versions, for the Britannica has come in for it's share of revising, book-burning and other distortions in late years under the guidance of the enemy.

Secure a copy of the PROTOCOLS, read and re-read. Analyze each of the 24 PROTOCOLS, section by section,of which there are 292 and you will discover exactly how, when and where COMMUNISM has made it's inroads into WORLD HISTORY for 65 years. Trace the philosophy back to it's beginning if you can. Read between the lines just as you would analyze a financial statement and you will discover that this fight is no place for a bare-foot boy, and I have a feeling you were not fully shod when you made the decision to enter the battle. Let me say from experience that this gang can cause you to lose your pants and shirt. You see, I did not waste time looking for my trousers, but I made it a point to discover that the culprits were not SEMITES, but instead, they were Zionist of the modern type and were not Hebrew Jews and of ASIATIC ORIGIN and heathens that had been circumcized in in 740 A.D. and turned into JEWS by the KHAZAR KING BULAN and this removal of a little fore-skin has given them a license to pose as JEWS under Talmudic direction ever since. Since the Unabridged Dictionary defines a JEW as being of HEBREW ORIGIN, a blind man should be able to discover that they are not JEWS.

The Khazars can be traced back through authentic history to 2200 B.C. where they were known as the Hioong-noo savage tribe that roamed the plains of Northern Asia, and it was their savagery along with other tribes that they mongrelized with that was the real cause of the Chinese Wall being built across China, These wild tribes eventually forced their way to West Asia and fought and mongrelized with the Hunnic-Finnic Tribes of Mongols and shortly after the beginning of the Christian Era they forced their way across the Ural Mountains to settle in in what became known as the Chozar or Khazar Kingdom. These barbarians had no moral or spiritual code, neither did they have an alphabet or a written language. They adopted the Hebrew Alphabet to their polyglot lingo , snipped their fore-skins and became SEMITES, so they now claim.

"THE SUNFLOWER" editors mote that appears on page six of the brochure is a fair example of naivete qualifications that seemingly guide the John Birch Society as a whole. Read the PROTOCOLS and see if you can figure out just how this gang has gained control of the PRESS if it has not been through the SCHOOLS OF JOURNALISM. Find a single one in America if you can where the faculty is not dominated by the enemy of a FREE PRESS. Any one should have observed this. The same rule applies to every financial institution in America today.

#3. Robert Welch.

Sooner or later you will discover that your name on any Board of Directors of a Business Institution is a liability to that organization if they are dependent on financing in any manner where the International Banking Gang has a finger in the pie, and this applies to the Federal Reserve, which was their brainchild that dates back to 1770. It is just as much a part of the 1896 scheme as was the creation of Israel at the end of World War II. You may rest assured that every individual that has his name on the Council and as endorsers of your Society will be paying the price in the future. The enemy has eyes to see and ears to hear and you better believe that they never do any sleeping.

Let's go back to that "EDITOR'S NOTE", most certain if you will review that statement, " A STUDENT THAT GAVE HIS NAME AS'THOMAS' GOODWIN', BUSINESS SENIOR, and WHO WAS QUOTED AS ALLEGING THAT THE.. ANTI-SEMITISM THAT CHARACTERIZES SOME OF THEIR LITERATURE,CONDEMNS THE ENTIRE GROUP etc." Just how dumb do you suppose those editors take you to be. Wichita University is listed as having 5,364 students. Most certain the Seniors are all known to the REPORTERS and you can rest assured that "JACK ROBINS" of the SUNFLOWER STAFF knows that the statement made is a hoax, Surely you are not that dumb. I suggest that you delegate one of your Wichita Chapter to go to the bottom of this for there is a"nigger"in this woodpile and it will be a good idea to set the pile on fire to smoke him out. Reporters of that school of Journalism are not that dumb. Check the records and you will find a KHAZAR ZIONIST AT THE HELM, just as we have them in Oklahoma Universities. A Communist is like a skunk, he leaves his tracks behing and any one that disturbs them gets"stunk up"and the odor is identical.

Nail their tail to the barn door with their head down and you will have cured the varmit's ability to smear with lies or any other method. Remember that their toes are always on the front end of their foot and they are clumsy when backing up, but like the editors of the SUNFLOWER,they'LL back out of their hole if you are stupid enough to believe their story.

The "NATIONAL PROGRAM LETTER" on page 8 is exceptionally good. Keep the Chapters small where individuality has an opportunity to grow and express itself. Keep you membership secret and arm each one of the members with the facts. Have them ## equipped with the Road-map of Communism as it is furnished by the PROTOCOLS, and at all times refrain from the mob spirit, go armed with the truth and it will make you strong and free, which is an AMERICAN HERITAGE if we only preserve it.

Only when the enemy shouts"ANTI-SEMITIC" are you making progress. To learn this has cost me my fortune and security in my old age, but you and the world may rest assured that I am only beginning to fight. Even Ben Gurion and the the American Council for Judaism admit that no such a thing as SEMITIC EXISTS and have sais so by letter. When there "aint"any such animal, how can one be an ANTI-SEMITE?

There is no end to the history that I can quote on this subject and authenticate every statement. Arm yourslf with the truth and then have the courage to share it with the world and the enemy will vanish.

Sincerely yours.

Route 10, Tulsa, Okla.

L.G.Burt.

Tulsa, Okla. 10/1st. 1961.

Mr. A.G.Heinsohn,Jr.
Sevierville, Tenn.

Dear Friend Heinsohn:-

Many thanks for the kind word in your letter of the 25th. After having been in the fight for over 30 years, I have a feeling that I have a faint understanding of the problems and it is no place for a weakling. I am sure that my judgment is not all bad, nor do I believe that I am more optimistic than conditions warrant. Of course my World is small since I do not travel as I once did, but I have many contacts that cover the country generally. The report that I get is,"THERE IS A GENERAL AWAKENING". I am sure that the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY has has an important part. The Howl that went up was a healthy sign. It came from every corner of the nation, and the enemy is running scared. As I stated in my former letter, THE PLAN OF ORGANIZATION IS IDEAL, but I do question whether Welch is fully qualified to lay down rules to govern every detail. The ANTI-SEMITE HASSLE should never have taken place if the leaders had known all the facts, for there is no such thing in captivity as a SEMITE, Shemite or any thing to become ANTI to. There was a SEMITIC LANGUAGE, but the Arabs supposedly descended from Ishmael, the illegitimate son of Abraham and Hagar, an Egyptian handmaid of Sarai or Sarah, that live to be 90 yeers of age before God got around to make her fruitful to produce Isaac.Since the seed of Abraham supposedly was handed down from SHEM through 10 or 12 generations of direct lineage, and Abraham could only furnish half of the seed that both Isaac and Ishmael could inherit, it can be seen that if any promiscuous interloper got mixed up in the family lineage the claims of any of them might be well watered out. Of cour se such events don't leak out in good society, that do happen. I long ago learned to takes such claims with a grain of salty reservation.

Remember this one point. The Textile Products are distributed very generally by the element that claim to be JEWS. Finances of the entire world are under their domination. My suggestion is to know the enemy and outsmart them by beating them to the punch. I have no way of knowing how your Organization is constructed as far as the control lies, but be sure that the enemy does not start boreing into control. for I am sure you are marked for destruction.

If your Stock is open to purchase at any point, they will find an opening just like a Termite takes to wood. If you have followed the Wall Street Journal over the past two years, the story of the Endicott-Johnson Shoe Company to retain ownership and managment was only one of the recent scraps to oust the managment. I have been watching this thing for many years and have seen dozens of such take overs. Watch the one that is going on with Montgomery-Ward right at this time and observe the names that pop up from time to time until the International Banking gang of outlaws has taken over. When Avery retired from Wards they took over.

Here in Tulsa and Oklahoma this gang has taken over a great part of the Oil Industry in recent years.. I have watched the steps over months and years and know how they put people out of business. It is no laughing matter.

#2. Heinsohn.

You may rest assured that I am not an alarmist, but I have made a study of the operations of this gang and they are ruthless in their methods of operation. I have had first hand experience but I made it a point to find out how it was done after it was too late to save my own business or security in my old age. If I can save others the same experience, it is my way of leaving the world better than I found it. In my case they wrecked an other firm to get me. Rest assured that I have never ceased giving the enemy a rough time.

You may have access to the enclosed paper. The chances are that you gave it little thought if you have seen it, but Freedman is a Jew of Hebrew origin and is one of the best students of History in America. He has an interesting background and is a millionair in his own right and is devoting his whole time to exposing Communism. You can depend upon his statements. I suggest that you read this paper through and weigh it against the things you know by having seem them evolve.

This is explosive material and should not be left laying around where people that might have no desire to understand facts might get hold of it. You will note that the map is taken from the Jewish Encyclopedia and ties in with authentic records that can be traced back to 2,200 B.C. This paper carries only a part of the story but I have it in continuity and most of it retained in my memory with dates. It can be see that after 30 years of research on the subject of Communism, I should have a store of information that can't be picked up in a week. The great problem confronting the "Johnny-come-lately" group is the fact that so many sources of information have been brainwashed by the deletion of facts. The enemy are experts at this.

It might be well if you would send me your home address so I can reach you in the privacy of your home. There is some information that I might forward to you that it would be better if it did not go through a Business Office. Regardless of how well you may think information is guarded, my experience has been, that leaks often take place where least expected. I know that is is the case in the offices of the enemy. Some of the most potent information I have received in the past has come unexpectedly and without solicitation on my part. A clue develops and if followed up, it often results in a chain of information that unlocks a lot of doors. The great factor is to get to know the enemy and how they operate. The main problem is to not become conceited to the point that one assumes that he has the gang outsmarted. When one gets to be an expert, it is a sign of decay by dry-rot.

Read this paper with care, for it opens a door that few people know exists. It will give you an insight into the manner in which Communism has evolved out of a race of mongrelized heathens, that have latched onto a racial heritage, which they use as a front of respectability that has been badly distorted through Religious teachings that have been distorted through the ages and do not conform to natural law or common sense.

Never mix your Religious Philosophies with the fight against Communism, Zionism and Communism is POLITICAL and without a moral or Spiritual Code of any kind. It is BARBARIAN in every degree. Most of us have had a moral and spiritual code that unfits us for the fight in the rough and tumble style that is essential to win.

#3. Heinsohn,Jr.

There is one thing that we all have to learn in this fight. We all have to be tolerant of the methods that are used by others in this fight. Always keep the guns trained on the enemy and never take apot-shots at any one that is fighting with a pea-shooter. Too many that get into the scrap try to use 16" ammunition with a sling-shot. It is a waste of energy. Discover for yourself how Communism evolved out of the past centuries. Be sure that any statement that you make is based upon facts and then shoot both barrels. When you get the kick-back of name-calling and become branded with the title of Anti-Semitic, you'll know that you hit a crow, for that howl that the John Birch Society stirred up disclosed that crow-feathers were in the air.

As I stated that I was not elgible to become a member. I am not the only one, for I know of dozens that have been branded over the years. They will be found fighting shoulder to shoulder with any one that is in the fight. When your name was placed on that Council List, you were a marked individual as far as the enemy is concerned. Leave your Company and your Religion out of the scrap for in the eyes of the enemy, Gentiles have no soul and are cattle. Jesus was the illegitimate son of Pandira, a Roman Soldier, and we have no souls in the eyes of God. Let them think what they please as long as we don't accept the idea on our part.

I hope you will excuse me for writing such a lengthy letter, but the discussion of Communism has no terminal facilities if one is versed in the subject. With best wishes, I remain.

Sincerely Yours.

L.G.Burt

L.G.Burt.
Route 10.
Tulsa, Okla.

Lt. Gen. P. A. del Valle
41 Cornhill Street
Annapolis, Md.

18 June, 1962.

Dear Mr. Heinsohn:

The enclosures are self explanatory. They are being sent to a selected group of patriots, among whom we include you.

The Defenders of the American Constitution believe this is the life and death struggle of the Republic, and we implore you to join in it with us. We can cut down this piece of treason before it gets headway if we can get just one state to act. Whatever you can do to get the pressure built up locally and nationally on the state governments will pay dividends in freedom.

Yours for God and Country,

P.A.del Valle
Pres.D.A.C.

Tulsa, Okla. Sept. 19th. 1961.

Mr. A.G.Heinsohn, Jr.
Cherokee Textile Nills.
Sevierville, Tenn.

Dear Pal in DISREPUTE:-

May I say "WELCOME TO THE FOLD,"You are to be congratulated whether you know it or not. The enclosed copy of a letter to Robert Welch will explain some of the details, and I am sure that after you weigh the facts as they are, that you will realize just how important you are becoming. This letter with the comments is a blessing in disguise and more deadly than an ATOMIC BOMB if you will only capitalize on it. It can be one of the finest pieces of amunition that money would not buy. Rest assured that I speak from over thirty years experience.

I note that your name appears in the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY brochure, as a member of the COUNCIL, and you should be proud that you rank in that group, but the price that you will pay is going to be high. It so happens that I speak with "THE VOICE OF EXPERIENCE". I have been through the wringer and am thankful that I was not liquidated to still my voice. The facts are that I have been told that such is the case. For some unexplainable reason, I have always had a faculty of getting on the inside and having information fall in my lap. Just why this is so I do not profess to know.

Like yourself, for many years I was the sole owner of a successful business and manufactured merchandise that sold all over the world wher Oil was produced. I had a feeling of being a substantial business man and my judgment was respected even by some Bankers, but I felt I had a fortune to share, for I had spent many years researching into Religions and history of people and their governments. This included our own Constitutional Form of Government. Being able to understand 8th. Grade English I found many things in our CONSTITUTION that were being ignored and the meanings distorted to suit opportunist. The facts were that I had a bump of curiosity to find out what the influence was that did the conniving and I found that it always could be traced back to that 1896 meet of HERZL and his 204 Elders of Zion.

I conceived the idea of putting on a Broadcast to awaken the sleeping Public. I paid for the time on the air out of my own pocket. I wrote the script, always being sure that I could authenticate every statement. I did this for the protection of the Station and myself. While the range of the station was small, I managed to build up a loyal and appreciative audience. I started in very moderate by fully explaining how and why the Constitution had been conceived and why the safeguard were incorporated, and after a few months I began to explain how the inroads were developing and what the result would be. The facts are that I eventually opened up the vitrol. The fight came along for "ONE WORLD GOVERNMENT, Oklahoma was one of the states that was in the hopper. Our Legislature had approved the proposition and put it on the ballot for a vote of the people to amend the Constitution. I teamed up with Senator Price (State Senator) and we devoted about two months to the campaign against it. As a result it was defeated and hell was to pay and the ANTI DEFAMATION LEAGUE and the Zionist issued orders to "GET OLD MAN BURT AT ANY PRICE,HE KNOWS TOO MUCH." They tried to get me put off the air, but the Station manager told them that as long

as I could pay for the time and authenticate my statements, that the timw was mine. The manager called me in and informed me what he had told the gang and told me who the gang was, then he added, Burt, we are 1500% behind you, give them hell.

Things rocked along several months, and one day the sky fell in on me, for they had manipulated around through the International Banking gang and had me wrecked by cutting of my supply of material that was vital. While I made connections for an other source of supply, they began boreing into that source like a termite and it took less tham two years to have them wreck that supplier and my business also. They put me out on my uppers, but in spite of that I have managed to exist, although they cramped my style and made it impossible for me to spend the money so badly needed to carry on the fight, I have managed to spend my time researching into history and by keeping busy, I have not had the time to sit down and weep or sympathize with myself. Of course I am still a S.O.B., BASTARD, and a ANTI*SEMITE, plus many other titles too numarous to mention, but each one is a battle strip that I am proud of. It is quite possible that the shortage od rich food at time may have prolonged the battle, but it has never caused the loss of a shot when I have been within range of a target.

As I look over the list of the John Birch Society, let me sgy that I am not afraid to be found dead in the company of any of them for I am sure we are fighting for the same cause. I do believe that there is a great degree of difference in our understanding of what the enemy really is and how serious the whole thing has become. It is no place for a coward or novice in my books.

Rest assured that you and any other person that has his name on that Brocgure is branded by te enemy. The big cry that went up from every corner of the nation against the Society was a healthy sign and the space that was devoted in the Congressional Record was of value. The enemy is bound to be against you, and the damn fool that rises up and spouts off with the enemies line is brainwashed to the point that his brain has been thrown out in the rinse. Make a point to never become angry for losing your temper at a fool is a waste of energy, and no one thinks well when mad. Keep a cool head and out-think the enemy by getting him mad and calling names. Learn to laugh at them and feed them rumors that keeps them perplexed.

Make every-day a HEYDAY by stirring the animals. If I have written any thing to Welch that you would like to have clarified, rest assured that I can do it and tell you where to look to authenticate it. Let's not become ANTI-HEBREW JEWISH for they are as dumb as others can be, but this Asiatic Jew that was a Hioong-noo heathen that had his prepuce clipped as a part of a ritualistic hocus-pocus. I believe that I can secure you a photo-copy of a letter from Ben Gurion's office, also from the Jewish Council in New York that confirms that there is no such thing as a SEMITE or SEMITIC. You just can't be ANTI-SOMERHING THAT AINT,

Keep up the good work and remember that there is no place to quit once we start for a fool is born every minute and the seemingly don't die.

Sincerely yours,

L.G.Burt

L.G.Burt. Route 10, Tulsa, Okla.

Tulsa, Okla. Sept.18th. 1961.

Mr. Robert Welch.
The John Birch Society, Inc.
Belmont 78, Massachusetts.

Dear Mr. Welch:-

The Brochure at hand with other material regarding the John Birch Society and I want to thank you for the same although I am not elgible to become a member. You see, I having been in the fight against COMMUNISM for over 30 years have been cussed and discussed from stem to stern and branded as an ANTI*SEMITE so long that I would feel that something was missing if I should loose any degree of the title. One thing sure, my effectivness would have vanished with the loss of the title.

I am quite sure that it is a sign of asininity for any one to get an idea that they can fight Communism out in the open and not be branded withe the meaningless smear title. An individual or group becomes automatically smeared the instant that they become effective. Since there is no race of people that can honestly class themselves as SEMITES, SHEMITES, or SEMITIC and exclude all others, therefore the word is meaningless except as a smear word and only through ignorance on the part of any one does it have value as a smear. Any one that knows the facts can soon discover that it is a valuable title because it indicates that the individual or group is effective.

Over the past several months, I have received many calls regarding the merits of the Society and whom to contact to join. It so happens that I am quite well informed about the details of your organization, havinf read every word that has been published in the Congressional Record and having been in contact with several members by mail and phone, or personal contact, thus I have been able to do you some good.

Since I am 77 years young and past the age of being a joiner with false delusions, I am willing to help the younger individual get into action which is much needed to save the world from the enemy. In my estimation your plan of organization is ideal and bound to be effective. I believe that particular stress should be put on each unit becoming a study club with each member becoming fully informed in every detail as to how, when and where Communism made it's start and exactly how and where it works with it's many fronts, for Moscow and Kruschev is only one front out of a hundred. New ones pop up every day and they bore in like termites and lay an egg to hatch into an active unit of operation just as you will find them in the Tulsa Y.M.C.A. under the guise of BROTHERHOOD, or in the National Council of Churches and scores of other places too numerous to mention.

This is no panty-waist scrap for an ignoramus that has to run home and ask ma or his wife what to do next. One has to become a leader and be willing to stand alone and ready to fight to the finish without any thought of surrender. You and your members are out in the open, but the enemy is well intrenched and they know exactly where they plan to go next. Their ROAD-MAP and TIME-TABLE has all been a matter of record since 1896, or over 65 years. You and every member of the John Birch Society should secure a copy. If you will do this and then take it apart to discover where we were then and compare it with the events that have taken place in history over the 65 years, you will discover where you are in 1961.

#2. Robert Welch.

You will discover just why they shout ANTI-SEMITIC when you become a bit potent. You will discover things that you have never had an inkling about, for it discloses just why your Banker, Publisher and Broadcasting Networks as they do when it comes to news, finances and every other thing that goes to make up life in a free country.

The ROAD MAP I refer to is"ThePROTOCOLS OF THE LEARNED ELDERS OF ZION." Regardless of what any one may claim, Theodor Herzl and his 204 self chosen and self styled ELDERS OF ZION wrote the ticket for the thing we call Communism today and they distorted the term ZIONISM into a POLITICAL meaning entirely foreign to it's concept in the beginning. This statement can be proven by compareing any Encyclopaedia Britannica previous to the 12th. edition to the modern versions, for the Britannica has come in for it's share of revising, book-burning and other distortions in late years under the guidance of the enemy.

Secure a copy of the PROTOCOLS, read and re-read. Analyze each of the 24 PROTOCOLS, section by section,of which there are 292 and you will discover exactly how, when and where COMMUNISM has made it's inroads into WORLD HISTORY for 65 years. Trace the philosophy back to it's beginning if you can. Read between the lines just as you would analyze a financial statement and you will discover that this fight is no place for a bare-foot boy, and I have a feeling you were not fully shod when you made the decision to enter the battle. Let me say from experience that this gang can cause you to lose your pants and shirt. You see, I did not waste time looking for my trousers, but I made it a point to discover that the culprits were not SEMITES, but instead, they were Zionist of the modern type and were not Hebrew Jews and of ASIATIC ORIGIN and heathens that had been circumcized in in 740 A.D. and turned into JEWS by the KHAZAR KING BULAN and this removal of a little fore-skin has given them a license to pose as JEWS under Talmudic direction ever since. Since the Unabridged Dictionary defines a JEW as being of HEBREW ORIGIN, a blind man should be able to discover that they are not JEWS.

The Khazars can be traced back through authentic history to 2200 B.C. where they were known as the Hioong-noo savage tribe that roamed the plains of Northern Asia, and it was their savagery along with other tribes that they mongrelized with that was the real cause of the Chinese Wall being built across China, These wild tribes eventually forced their way to West Asia and fought and mongrelized with the Hunnic-Finnic Tribes of Mongols and shortly after the beginning of the Christian Era they forced their way across the Ural Mountains to settle in in what became known as the Chozar or Khazar Kingdom. These barbarians had no moral or spiritual code, neither did they have an alphabet or a written language. They adopted the Hebrew Alphabet to their polyglot lingo , snipped their fore-skins and became SEMITES, so they now claim.

"THE SUNFLOWER" editors mote that appears on page six of the brochure is a fair example of naivete qualifications that seemingly guide the John Birch Society as a whole. Read the PROTOCOLS and see if you can figure out just how this gang has gained control of the PRESS if it has not been through the SCHOOLS OF JOURNALISM. Find a single one in America if you can where the faculty is not dominated by the enemy of a FREE PRESS. Any one should have observed this. The same rule applies to every financial institution in America today.

#3. Robert Welch.

Sooner or later you will discover that your name on any Board of Directors of a Business Institution is a liability to that organization if they are dependent on financing in any manner where the International Banking Gang has a finger in the pie, and this applies to the Federal Reserve, which was their brainchild that dates back to 1770. It is just as much a part of the 1896 scheme as was the creation of Israel at the end of World War II. You may rest assured that every individual that has his name on the Council and as endorsers of your Society will be paying the price in the future. The enemy has eyes to see and ears to hear and you better believe that they never do any sleeping.

Let's go back to that "EDITOR'S NOTE", most certain if you will review that statement, " A STUDENT THAT GAVE HIS NAME AS'THOMAS' GOODWIN', BUSINESS SENIOR, and WHO WAS QUOTED AS ALLEGING THAT THE.. ANTI-SEMITISM THAT CHARACTERIZES SOME OF THEIR LITERATURE,CONDEMNS THE ENTIRE GROUP etc." Just how dumb do you suppose those editors take you to be. Wichita University is listed as having 5,364 students. Most certain the Seniors are all known to the REPORTERS and you can rest assured that "JACK ROBINS" of the SUNFLOWER STAFF knows that the statement made is a hoax, Surely you are not that dumb. I suggest that you delegate one of your Wichita Chapter to go to the bottom of this for there is a"nigger"in this woodpile and it will be a good idea to set the pile on fire to smoke him out. Reporters of that school of Journalism are not that dumb. Check the records and you will find a KHAZAR ZIONIST AT THE HELM, just as we have them in Oklahoma Universities. A Communist is like a skunk, he leaves his tracks behing and any one that disturbs them gets"stunk up"and the odor is identical.

Nail their tail to the barn door with their head down and you will have cured the varmit's ability to smear with lies or any other method. Remember that their toes are always on the front end of their foot and they are clumsy when backing up, but like the editors of the SUNFLOWER,they'LL back out of their hole if you are stupid enough to believe their story.

The "NATIONAL PROGRAM LETTER" on page 8 is exceptionally good. Keep the Chapters small where individuality has an opportunity to grow and express itself. Keep you membership secret and arm each one of the members with the facts. Have them ## equipped with the Road-map of Communism as it is furnished by the PROTOCOLS, and at all times refrain from the mob spirit, go armed with the truth and it will make you strong and free, which is an AMERICAN HERITAGE if we only preserve it.

Only when the enemy shouts"ANTI-SEMITIC" are you making progress. To learn this has cost me my fortune and security in my old age, but you and the world may rest assured that I am only beginning to fight. Even Ben Gurion and the the American Council for Judaism admit that no such a thing as SEMITIC EXISTS and have sais so by letter. When there "aint"any such animal, how can one be an ANTI-SEMITE?

There is no end to the history that I can quote on this subject and authenticate every statement. Arm yourslf with the truth and then have the courage to share it with the world and the enemy will vanish.

Sincerely yours.

Route 10, Tulsa, Okla.

L.G.Burt.

Tulsa, Okla. 10/1st. 1961.

Mr. A.G.Heinsohn,Jr.
Sevierville, Tenn.

Dear Friend Heinsohn:-

Many thanks for the kind word in your letter of the 25th. After having been in the fight for over 30 years, I have a feeling that I have a faint understanding of the problems and it is no place for a weakling. I am sure that my judgment is not all bad, nor do I believe that I am more optimistic than conditions warrant. Of course my World is small since I do not travel as I once did, but I have many contacts that cover the country generally. The report that I get is,"THERE IS A GENERAL AWAKENING". I am sure that the JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY has has an important part. The Howl that went up was a healthy sign. It came from every corner of the nation, and the enemy is running scared. As I stated in my former letter, THE PLAN OF ORGANIZATION IS IDEAL, but I do question whether Welch is fully qualified to lay down rules to govern every detail. The ANTI-SEMITE HASSLE should never have taken place if the leaders had known all the facts, for there is no such thing in captivity as a SEMITE, Shemite or any thing to become ANTI to. There was a SEMITIC LANGUAGE, but the Arabs supposedly descended from Ishmael, the illegitimate son of Abraham and Hagar, an Egyptian handmaid of Sarai or Sarah, that live to be 90 yeers of age before God got around to make her fruitful to produce Isaac.Since the seed of Abraham supposedly was handed down from SHEM through 10 or 12 generations of direct lineage, and Abraham could only furnish half of the seed that both Isaac and Ishmael could inherit, it can be seen that if any promiscuous interloper got mixed up in the family lineage the claims of any of them might be well watered out. Of cour se such events don't leak out in good society, that do happen. I long ago learned to takes such claims with a grain of salty reservation.

Remember this one point. The Textile Products are distributed very generally by the element that claim to be JEWS. Finances of the entire world are under their domination. My suggestion is to know the enemy and outsmart them by beating them to the punch. I have no way of knowing how your Organization is constructed as far as the control lies, but be sure that the enemy does not start boreing into control. for I am sure you are marked for destruction.

If your Stock is open to purchase at any point, they will find an opening just like a Termite takes to wood. If you have followed the Wall Street Journal over the past two years, the story of the Endicott-Johnson Shoe Company to retain ownership and managment was only one of the recent scraps to oust the managment. I have been watching this thing for many years and have seen dozens of such take overs. Watch the one that is going on with Montgomery-Ward right at this time and observe the names that pop up from time to time until the International Banking gang of outlaws has taken over. When Avery retired from Wards they took over.

Here in Tulsa and Oklahoma this gang has taken over a great part of the Oil Industry in recent years.. I have watched the steps over months and years and know how they put people out of business. It is no laughing matter.

#2. Heinsohn.

You may rest assured that I am not an alarmist, but I have made a study of the operations of this gang and they are ruthless in their methods of operation. I have had first hand experience but I made it a point to find out how it was done after it was too late to save my own business or security in my old age. If I can save others the same experience, it is my way of leaving the world better than I found it. In my case they wrecked an other firm to get me. Rest assured that I have never ceased giving the enemy a rough time.

You may have access to the enclosed paper. The chances are that you gave it little thought if you have seen it, but Freedman is a Jew of Hebrew origin and is one of the best students of History in America. He has an interesting background and is a millionair in his own right and is devoting his whole time to exposing Communism. You can depend upon his statements. I suggest that you read this paper through and weigh it against the things you know by having seem them evolve.

This is explosive material and should not be left laying around where people that might have no desire to understand facts might get hold of it. You will note that the map is taken from the Jewish Encyclopedia and ties in with authentic records that can be traced back to 2,200 B.C. This paper carries only a part of the story but I have it in continuity and most of it retained in my memory with dates. It can be see that after 30 years of research on the subject of Communism, I should have a store of information that can't be picked up in a week. The great problem confronting the "Johnny-come-lately" group is the fact that so many sources of information have been brainwashed by the deletion of facts. The enemy are experts at this.

It might be well if you would send me your home address so I can reach you in the privacy of your home. There is some information that I might forward to you that it would be better if it did not go through a Business Office. Regardless of how well you may think information is guarded, my experience has been, that leaks often take place where least expected. I know that is is the case in the offices of the enemy. Some of the most potent information I have received in the past has come unexpectedly and without solicitation on my part. A clue develops and if followed up, it often results in a chain of information that unlocks a lot of doors. The great factor is to get to know the enemy and how they operate. The main problem is to not become conceited to the point that one assumes that he has the gang outsmarted. When one gets to be an expert, it is a sign of decay by dry-rot.

Read this paper with care, for it opens a door that few people know exists. It will give you an insight into the manner in which Communism has evolved out of a race of mongrelized heathens, that have latched onto a racial heritage, which they use as a front of respectability that has been badly distorted through Religious teachings that have been distorted through the ages and do not conform to natural law or common sense.

Never mix your Religious Philosophies with the fight against Communism, Zionism and Communism is POLITICAL and without a moral or Spiritual Code of any kind. It is BARBARIAN in every degree. Most of us have had a moral and spiritual code that unfits us for the fight in the rough and tumble style that is essential to win.

#3. Heinsohn,Jr.

There is one thing that we all have to learn in this fight. We all have to be tolerant of the methods that are used by others in this fight. Always keep the guns trained on the enemy and never take apot-shots at any one that is fighting with a pea-shooter. Too many that get into the scrap try to use 16" ammunition with a sling-shot. It is a waste of energy. Discover for yourself how Communism evolved out of the past centuries. Be sure that any statement that you make is based upon facts and then shoot both barrels. When you get the kick-back of name-calling and become branded with the title of Anti-Semitic, you'll know that you hit a crow, for that howl that the John Birch Society stirred up disclosed that crow-feathers were in the air.

As I stated that I was not elgible to become a member. I am not the only one, for I know of dozens that have been branded over the years. They will be found fighting shoulder to shoulder with any one that is in the fight. When your name was placed on that Council List, you were a marked individual as far as the enemy is concerned. Leave your Company and your Religion out of the scrap for in the eyes of the enemy, Gentiles have no soul and are cattle. Jesus was the illegitimate son of Pandira, a Roman Soldier, and we have no souls in the eyes of God. Let them think what they please as long as we don't accept the idea on our part.

I hope you will excuse me for writing such a lengthy letter, but the discussion of Communism has no terminal facilities if one is versed in the subject. With best wishes, I remain.

Sincerely Yours.

L.G.Burt

L.G.Burt.
Route 10.
Tulsa, Okla.